

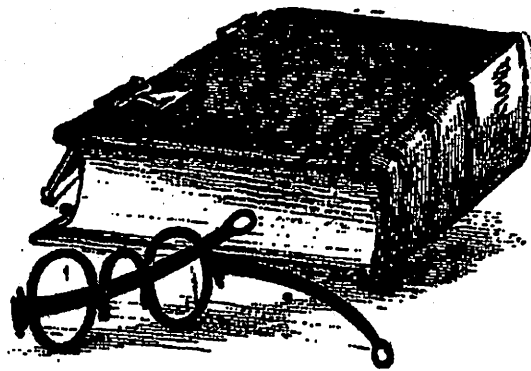
**DIFFICULT
BIBLICAL QUESTIONS
ANSWERED**

**"Heaven and earth shall pass away,
but
My Words shall not pass away"
Matt. 24:35**

**By
Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier**

Not to be Sold

**Difficult
Biblical Questions
Answered**



By

Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier

Christian Literature and Bible Center Inc.,

U. S. AMERICA

NOT TO BE SOLD

PREFACE

There will always be questions that we will have concerning God and the Bible as we travel through life in these finite bodies. The study of God's Word is a lifelong process and the more we understand about the working power of God, the more we realize that we know so little. We will be dealing with various questions that come to our mind as we study the Bible, and these questions will develop into related questions. I have dealt with these issues to encourage the student of the Bible to patiently search out the Scripture. Remember that God has a perfect reason for every action of the past, present and future. The character of God can never be marred in any fashion and when we question what God has done or said, it is because we do not have all the facts. Student of the Bible, *"Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth."* 2 Tim 2: 15.

There is also another very important issue, in desiring to solve the various Biblical truths, and that is your relationship with God through the Holy Spirit. If you are an unbeliever and do not have the new birth by the Holy Spirit, you are unable to understand the deep things of God's Word. If you are in such a category, I advise you to accept Christ as your personal Savior, and become born of God the Holy Spirit. (Jn 3: 15-18; Jn 5: 24; Rom 10: 9-13) In order for one to get the full blessings and understanding from the Word of God, I advise you to, *"Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall be saved."* *"But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through His name."* Jn 20: 31. Once you enter that Royal family of God, God desires that you allow Him to control your life. There is fullness of joy, in obedience to the will of God. *"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God."* Rom 12:1-2.

Study the Bible with a desire to accept the truth and apply it to your own life. When the Holy Spirit leads you, you can rest assured that He will reveal unto you the Divine viewpoint as He is ready to guide you into all truth. It is the desire of the Eternal Son of God that you understand the Bible. *"And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever; even the Spirit of truth whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you."* Jn 14: 16-17. This is a change from God's dealing with the Old Testament saints. It happened on the day of Pentecost, when God sent the Holy Spirit to dwell in all New Testament believers. (Acts 2:1-4.) As an individual you must make your choice of being born of God the Holy Spirit or remaining dead in trespasses and sins. As you make your own choice, remember this: *"There is a way that seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death."* Prov 14: 12.

Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier
Christian Literature and Bible Center Inc.,

U. S. AMERICA

DEDICATION

This Biblical textbook has been dedicated to all my precious brothers and sisters in the Lord, who have been praying and supporting this outreach down through some 55 years. The Lord has been gracious to me, with good spiritual understanding of the Bible, as well as good health. He has enabled me to write these many Biblical textbooks, and provided the means to ship tons of Biblical study material to many places around the world. God has promised to provide all of my needs, according to the riches in Christ Jesus. (*Phil 4: 19,*) He has always done exceeding abundantly above all my needs, and we have never been in debt, as everything is sent entirely as free as the Gospel. This is what the Lord is doing!

I take this opportunity of thanking all who have had a part in this work, and especially those who have upheld us with prayer as well as care. I thank the churches and Sunday Schools, and the individuals who have pledged to send regular gifts for the work of spreading the Gospel, around the world. As God's stewards, we desire to fulfill the great commission, using the "Printed Page" as tens of thousands of "Paper Missionaries," to take the Gospel to "The Regions Beyond." "*So then, faith cometh by hearing, and hearing, by the Word of God.*" *Rom 10: 17.* God's Word is established forever, and be assured that God's Word will not return unto Him void. (*Isa 55: 11.*) This work could not be done alone, but it takes each and every one of you, to further the Gospel in these last days. Thank you in the name of Jesus Christ our Lord. May the Lord grant you great dividends in heaven. May we live each day as though it were our last opportunity to serve the Lord, yet reaching out with the gospel to the fields that are white unto harvest. May we join our every effort as members of the body of Christ, pressing on toward that prize and high calling in Christ Jesus, waiting and longing to take part in the greatest "Air Lift" of all time.

(1 Thessalonians 4: 13-18.)

As I finish my course upon "planet Earth," I desire to keep on keeping on until the Lord calls me home, either by the Rapture, or by leaving this body to be present with the Lord. Having accepted the Lord Jesus Christ in 1920, I thank God for a long relationship with the Lord. God the Holy Spirit has been patient with me down through these many years and the hand of God is continually upon my life. My precious mother who went to be with the Lord when I was a teenager, prayed that one of her two sons would be a missionary. The Lord answered her prayer through my life and it has been a joy and privilege to have served the Lord all these years. So many of you have backed my life by prayer, and I count it a great privilege to dedicate this Biblical textbook to all of you. One day we will all meet together with the Lord in heaven and will realize what our unity in prayer has made possible. The study of the Word of God brings comfort in this present world system, and confidence for the future. "*And now, little children, abide in Him, that, when He shall appear, we may have confidence and not be ashamed before Him at His coming.*" *1 Jn.2: 28.*

Your Missionary
Rev., Dr. Andrew J. Losier

FOREWORD

It is with great pleasure and honor that I present to you Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier, who served as a missionary in foreign lands for 43 years. This man of faith has been used by God in a mighty way. As fellow servant of our Lord Jesus Christ, Andy has worked diligently at sending God's Word to the uttermost parts of the earth. Using "Paper Missionaries" from the Christian Literature & Bible Center Inc., God has enabled Andy to put the Sword of the Spirit (God's Word) into hands which will multiply it again, many times over. Our "Blessed Hope" for the world today is knowing God's Word, which will not return unto Him void of its purpose. *Isa 55: 11.*

This giant of a man is not only large in stature and heart but also in faith. It has been my pleasure and study to watch God do great and mighty works through Andy's faith. Andy has been my mentor of how to live by faith and also my source of wise counsel for many years. I have seen this man not only proclaim God's Word, but live it. A man who has studied "*to show himself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the Word of truth.*"

2 Tim 2: 15. A man who has applied his study, in his life and work.

I can think of no other man more qualified to address "Difficult Bible Questions," than Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier. Dr. Losier offers to the reader of this textbook a rare commodity; the wisdom given by God to a man who has used it and is eager to share it with others. It is my prayer that this textbook will fall into the hands of men and women who are hungry for the things of God. May God bless this textbook and its writer for the glory of Jesus Christ our Lord and Savior. Amen.

"For the Word of God is alive and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart." Heb 4:12.

John D. Sharpe

Christian Youth Director.

Toccoa, Georgia, U. S. America

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE	i
DEDICATION	ii
FOREWORD	iii
TABLE OF CONTENTS	iv
CHAPTER 1 INTRODUCTION	1
SEVEN PRINCIPLES FOR STUDYING GOD'S WORD	2
FIVE HELPFUL HINTS IN THE STUDY OF THE BIBLE.	3
GOD THE HOLY SPIRIT IS ABSOLUTELY ESSENTIAL.	3
ACCEPT WHAT THE BIBLE TEACHES	3
STUDY THE CHARACTER OF GOD	4
GOD MAKES ALL THINGS PERFECT	5
REGULATIONS IN BIBLICAL STUDY	6
QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER ONE	7
CHAPTER 2 WHERE DID GOD COME FROM?	8
THREE IMPORTANT ASPECTS OF BIBLE TRUTH?	12
THE CHARACTER OF GOD VERIFIED.	13
VOLITION THROUGH GOD CLASSIFIED.	13
THE CREATION BY GOD SECURELY PURIFIED.	15
QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER TWO	16
CHAPTER 3 WHY WAS LUCIFER CREATED?	17
WHAT WAS LUCIFER'S CHARACTER?	17
WHAT WAS LUCIFER'S POWER?	20
WHAT TWO NAMES WERE GIVEN TO LUCIFER?	20
WHAT DESCRIPTIVE NAMES ARE USED FOR THE DEVIL?	20
HOW DID LUCIFER BECOME SATAN OR THE DEVIL?	23
WHAT WERE THE FIRST SINS?	23
WHAT DID SATAN SAY TO GOD?	23
WHAT DOES SATAN DO TODAY?	24

THE CHARACTER AND POWERFUL WORK OF SATAN	24
DOES SATAN STILL HAVE HIS POWER?	24
DID SATAN FALL ALONE?	25
HOW DID THE EARTH BECOME VOID?	26
WHAT PRISONERS ARE BEING KEPT BY SATAN?	26
FROM SHEOL TO PARADISE	26
SATANIC POWER TO INDWELL OTHER CREATURES.	27
WHAT WILL BE LUCIFER'S DOWNFALL?	28
QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER THREE	33
<u>CHAPTER 4</u> WHERE DID MAN COME FROM?	34
THE CREATION OF THE FIRST MAN ADAM.	34
THE TEST OF THE FIRST MAN ADAM.	35
THE RESULTS IN THE FIRST MAN ADAM.	36
THE QUESTION OF SIN.	39
QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FOUR	40
<u>CHAPTER 5</u> WHY WAS A UNIVERSAL FLOOD NECESSARY?	41
WHAT WAS HAPPENING TO THE HUMAN RACE BEFORE THE FLOOD?	41
WHAT PROMISE WAS GOD PROTECTING WHEN HE SENT THE FLOOD?	43
WHAT HAPPENED TO ALL OF THE DINOSAURS?	43
QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FIVE.	45
<u>CHAPTER 6</u> WHY DO WE HAVE SO MANY LANGUAGES?	46
THE ASPIRATION OF MANKIND.	46
A ONE-WORLD-RELIGION	47
THE TOWER OF BABEL.	47
THE PRACTICE OF RELIGION.	48
NIMROD THE MIGHTY MAN.	49
ONE WORLD RELIGION.	50
THE TRANSFER OF RELIGIOUS POWER.	52
THE REVIVAL OF PAGANISM.	52
INTEGRATED RELIGION.	53
THE WRITTEN WORD OF GOD.	54
QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER SIX	55

<u>CHAPTER 7</u>	WHY WAS ISRAEL CHOSEN AS A FAVORITE OF GOD?	57
	THE IMPORTANCE OF THE DIVIDING OF THE NATIONS.	57
	THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE IS NECESSARY.	58
	HOW DID SATAN TRY TO DESTROY GOD'S PLAN?	58
	A CHANNEL FOR THE INCARNATION OF THE SON OF GOD.	60
	GOD'S INCARNATION CHANNEL PRESERVED.	61
	QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER SEVEN	63
<u>CHAPTER 8</u>	WHY THE NECESSITY OF THE MOSAIC LAW?	64
	THE CHARACTER OF GOD.	64
	THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD.	67
	THE JUDGEMENTS OF GOD.	68
	QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER EIGHT.	70
<u>CHAPTER 9</u>	WHY WAS THE CRUCIFIXION NECESSARY?	71
	THE CONFLICT WITHIN GOD'S CREATION.	71
	THE PLAN OF GOD WAS IN JEOPARDY.	72
	THE GRACE OF GOD DEMANDED IT.	72
	SALVATION BY THE GRACE OF GOD APART FROM WORKS.	74
	QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER NINE.	75
<u>CHAPTER 10</u>	WHY DO CHRISTIANS SUFFER?	76
	THE TOTAL DEPRAVITY OF OUR OLD NATURE.	76
	THE GLORY OF GOD.	78
	LEARNING TO BECOME STRONG IN THE LORD.	79
	QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER TEN.	82
<u>CHAPTER 11</u>	WHY ARE THERE TWO RESURRECTIONS?	83
	THEIR DESTINATIONS ARE DIFFERENT.	83
	THE FIRST RESURRECTION,	83
	CHRIST THE FIRST FRUITS.	84
	THE RAPTURE OF THE SAINTS	84
	THE RESURRECTION OF THE TRIBULATION SAINTS.	87
	THE RESURRECTION OF THE MILLENNIAL SAINTS.	87
	THE SECOND RESURRECTION	87
	GOD'S PLAN OF ALL AGES REQUIRES IT.	88

	THE CONSEQUENCE OF CHOICE DEMANDS IT.	89
	THE CHRISTIAN'S CHOICE	89
	THE NON-CHRISTIAN'S CHOICE	90
	QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER ELEVEN.	92
CHAPTER 12	WHY WILL GOD DESTROY-PRESENT HEAVEN AND EARTH?	93
	THE CONTAMINATION OF SIN HAS OCCURRED.	93
	THE ASPIRATIONS OF GOD DESIRES IT.	94
	THE NEW CREATION WILL BE FAR SUPERIOR.	95
	THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS REQUIRES GLORIFICATION.	96
	EVENTS PRECEDING THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH.	97
	THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT.	97
	THE ETERNAL NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH.	97
	THE NEW JERUSALEM.	98
	THE NEW PARADISE	98
	QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER TWELVE.	99
CHAPTER 13	WHEN WILL WE BE FREE FROM SIN AND WICKEDNESS?	100
	THE FINAL CONFLICT WITH THE DEVIL.	100
	THE BATTLEGROUND AND WARFARE OF BELIEVERS.	100
	THE FINAL CONFLICT WITH THE DEVIL AND THE DEMONS.	102
	ALMIGHTY GOD RECLAIMS THE TITLE DEED TO THIS WORLD.	102
	THE DOOM OF THE SUM TOTAL OF ALL SIN.	103
	THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT.	103
	THE DOOM OF THE FIRST CREATION.	104
	THE DOOM OF THE UNGODLY OF ALL AGES.	104
	ALL THINGS CREATED NEW.	105
	THE LIKENESS OF THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH.	105
	QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER THIRTEEN.	108
CHAPTER 14	WHY DO WE NEED NEW BODIES?	109
	TO GLORIFY GOD, NEW BODIES ARE REQUIRED.	109
	THOSE OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS, OFFERING ANIMAL	
	SACRIFICES.	109
	THOSE BORN BY GOD THE HOLY SPIRIT.	110
	THOSE COMING OUT FROM THE GREAT TRIBULATION.	110
	THOSE BELIEVERS DURING THE MILLENNIUM.	110

THESE NEW BODIES ARE NECESSARY FOR OUR DIVINE OR HEAVENLY LIFE. . . . 111
 WE ARE DESTINED TO BE THE BRIDE OF CHRIST. 111
 QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FOURTEEN. 114

CHAPTER 15 **WHAT DOES THE FUTURE HOLD?** 115

ETERNAL UTOPIA 116

REMOVAL OF ALL EVIL FOR ETERNITY 116

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT. 116

EVERY KNEE SHALL BOW BEFORE THE SON OF GOD. 117

THE OLD CREATION WILL PASS AWAY FOREVER. 117

BE ALERT- ALL SAINTS OF GOD. 117

THE ETERNAL AND ABSOLUTE PERFECTION OF GOD 117

UNITED KINGDOM OF GOD. 118

THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS DEMONSTRATED. 118

THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS EVALUATED 119

PARADISE FOUND. 119

GOD'S TEMPORARY PARADISE. 119

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FIFTEEN. 122

INDEX OF QUESTIONS FOR THOUGHT 123

101

201

301

401

501

601

701

801

901

1001

1101

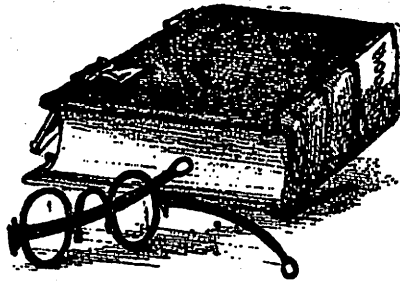
1201

1301

1401

1501

CHAPTER ONE



INTRODUCTION

This textbook has been written to help students answer difficult questions from the Bible. The difficult questions that I answer, are merely examples and show a pattern by which many difficult Biblical questions can be answered. There are some areas of God's revelation where many facts are purposely left out by God; others are difficult to understand, as Bible students, because we do not know all the facts.

In the early church many statements made by God the Holy Spirit were difficult for them to understand, because they did not have the complete Bible, as we have it today. Many people became critics. *"Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying, Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of: that by the Word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water, by which the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished. But the heavens and the earth which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved unto fire against the day of judgement and perdition of ungodly men."* (2 Pet 3: 3-7) This is a good reason to study and rightly divide the Word of Truth. Peter was warning against those critics who are against the Bible, and continued: *"But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day."* (2 Pet 3: 8)

As we study just a few of these difficult Bible events, may it help the dear student to use the same method in understanding other questions that may confront him. May I offer of a few Bible study helps, as you attempt to *"Rightly Divide, the Word of Truth."* (2 Tim 2: 15)

May you always remember that we do not separate ourselves from various truths in the Bible, but rather we apply the whole Word of God to our lives and learn from all the Word of God of the perfect character of God. For instance, we do not continue to sacrifice animals as the Old Testament saints did, but we do recognize the importance of these sacrifices for the **covering** of their sins, **until** God sent forth

His own Son to become the supreme and final sacrifice to remove all sin. Another important factor which we must understand is that God is dealing directly with Israel in these last days. Since Israel rejected their Messiah, they are destined to remain on planet earth, when believers, or Christians, are raptured out from the wrath to come. (*1 Thessalonians 1: 10.*) God is still dealing with Israel as we are reminded in *Romans 9 and 11* God has not cast away His people, but they will be chastened during the great tribulation. These and many more truths from God's Word must be studied so that we can **rightly divide** the Word of truth.

SEVEN PRINCIPLES FOR STUDYING GOD'S WORD

There are a few principles which we must apply as we study God's Word, if we want a better understanding of the Bible. Bear in mind the following guidelines.

1. The Word of God, the Bible, was revealed to individual writers by God the Holy Spirit. (*2 Timothy 3: 16-17*)
2. We must interpret all Scripture according to context rather than isolated truths.
3. We must take special note to whom God is speaking.
4. The Old Testament saints looked forward to the supreme sacrifice and the New Testament saints look back to the finished work of Christ on the cross.
5. In the Old Testament, God the Holy Spirit would come upon certain individuals for His revelation, but the New Testament saints all have the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, being born by the Holy Spirit. (*John 3: 3-6; John 14: 16-17.*)
6. The Old Testament saints look forward to the outpouring of the Holy Spirit. (*Joel 2: 28.*)
7. All New Testament saints are baptized by the Holy Spirit. (*1 Cor 12: 13.*)

FIVE HELPFUL HINTS IN THE STUDY OF THE BIBLE.

I. THE HELP OF GOD THE HOLY SPIRIT IS ABSOLUTELY ESSENTIAL.

1. Being born again by the Holy Spirit. (*Jn 3: 3-7; Acts 2: 1-4.*)
2. Keep on being filled by the Holy Spirit. (*Eh 5: 18.*)
3. Confess your sins and keep in fellowship with the Lord.
(*1 Jn 1: 7-9*)
4. Manifest "The Fruit of the Holy Spirit" in your life. (*Gal 5: 22-26.*)
5. Make full use of the natural gifts as well as those given by the Holy Spirit. (*1 Cor 12-14.*)
6. Do not grieve the Holy Spirit but let Him guide and direct you as you study the Bible.
(*Eh 4: 30*); (*Rom 8: 14*); (*Jn 16: 13*)
7. Allow the Holy Spirit to guide you into all truth, as you study the Bible, desiring to rightly divide the Word of truth. (*2 Tim 2: 15*); (*2 Tim 3: 16-17*)

II. YOU MUST BE WILLING TO ACCEPT WHAT THE BIBLE TEACHES AND ADJUST YOUR OWN CHRISTIAN LIFE ACCORDINGLY.

1. Take God at His Word, even if it is hard to understand.
(*2 Tim 2: 15*); (*2 Tim 3: 16-17*)
2. As you study the Bible, remove all pre-conceived ideas, and let the Bible speak to your heart. (*Prov 14: 12*)
3. Spend time reading the Bible, before you accept someone's comments on the Word of God. (*Heb 4: 12*); (*Isa 48: 16*)
4. Always allow the Bible to speak to you with precious promises from God.
(*Jer 33: 3*); (*Eh 6: 18*); (*Eh 3: 14-21*)

5. **There are no new revelations given after the writing of the Book of Revelations.**
(Rev 22: 18-19)
6. **When teaching the Word of God, spend time in studying the context of the chapters. This will give you the right perspective, the right setting and come to God's purpose for such revelation. Remember that there is one interpretation, but many applications.**
7. **Always bear in mind that the character of God never changes, as He is the same yesterday, and today and forever.**

As you seek the answers to many of your questions, it will be very valuable to understand the Author of the Bible as He reveals Himself in the Bible. Let us consider some of these important truths.

III. STUDY THE CHARACTER OF GOD ACCORDING TO HIS REVELATION IN THE BIBLE, AND DISCOVER THE FOLLOWING:

1. **God is the source of all love.**
(Jn 3: 16-17); (1 Jn 3: 1-3); (1 Jn 4: 7-10)
2. **God is absolute and the sum total of perfection.**
(Jas 1: 17)
3. **God is perfect and absolute justice.**
(Rom 3: 26); (Deut 33: 21); (Ps 89: 11-14)
4. **God is the source of all life, for He is eternal life.**
(Jn 1: 4); (Jn 14: 6); (1 Tim 1: 16); (Isa 45: 17); (Rom 16: 26)
5. **God is impeccable and can never sin.**
(Jn 8: 1-11, 45-46); (Matt 4: 1-11)
6. **God is righteous and never has a wrong decision.** *(Rom 3: 21-26); (1 Sam 26: 23); (Ps 11: 7); (Ps 19: 9); (Ps 145: 17); (1 Jn 3: 7); (Rev 16: 5)*
7. **God is Holy.**
(Isa 6: 3); (Ps 5: 4); (Jos 24: 19); (1 Sam 6: 20); (Ps 89: 18); (Isa 5: 16)

8. **God is absolute and perfect truth.**
(2 Thess 2: 8-12); (Jn 14: 17); (Deut 32: 4); (Ps 31: 5); (Isa 10: 20)
9. **God is immutable and never changes.**
(Heb 13: 8); (Jas 1: 17); (Heb 7: 24)
10. **God is ruler and sovereign over all.**
(Dan 2: 19-22); (1 Chron 16: 31); (Ps 47: 1-9); (Ps 97: 1-12); (Rev 11: 15)
11. **God is Omniscient and nothing is hidden from Him.**
(Rom 11: 33-36); (Ps 139: 1-24)
12. **God is Omnipresent and is present everywhere and is aware of all.**
(Ps 139: 1-18)
13. **God is Omnipotent and the sum total of all power.**
(Gen 17: 1); (Gen 35: 11); (Ex 6: 3); (Ps 68: 14); (Rev 17: 7)

IV. GOD MAKES ALL THINGS PERFECT ACCORDING TO HIS CHARACTER.

1. The creation of the Heavens and the Earth were created according to the will of God and God saw that they were good. *(Gen 1: 1); (Gen 1: 31)*
2. God created all of the angelic hosts perfect, but gave them a will to choose right or wrong. *(Ps 68: 1-19); (Ps 108: 20); (Ps 104: 4); (Ps 148: 2)*
3. The anointed cherub, Lucifer was created perfect. *(Ezek 28: 13-15)*
4. Christians are made new creatures in Christ Jesus by God the Holy Spirit. *(2 Cor 5: 17); (Gal 6: 15)*
5. All things will be created new, where sin will never enter. God in His eternal plans has allowed sin to express itself, so that He can judge it and remove it forever when all things are made new. Then sin will never show its ugly head again!
(Dan 9: 24); (2 Pet 3: 13); (Rev 3: 12); (Isa 66: 2); (Rev 21: 1-5)

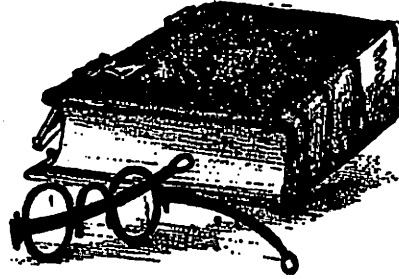
V. RULES AND REGULATIONS IN BIBLICAL STUDY AND TEACHING.

1. When teaching the Word of God, keep your reasoning within the context, and clearly point out to whom God is referring. If you wish to make a secondary application, that is in order, but do not ignore God's original purpose in His revelation.
2. Distinguish between parables and actual events. You may note that a parable will usually contain such statements as, "The kingdom of heaven is likened unto." An actual event may have a phrase like, "A certain man went forth."
3. When studying and teaching, place the emphasis upon the written truth, more so than the writer of the Biblical Passage. Remember that all Scripture is "God Breathed," by the Holy Spirit.
4. If you desire better gifts than you naturally have, do not neglect to use your natural given talents. God the Holy Spirit will add to your talents according to His will.
5. Since the Bible is not to be added to or taken from, with ones teaching (*Rev 22: 18-19*), the "Gift of Prophecy" in our day and generation refers to the gift of interpretation of the completed prophecy, in the Bible.
6. As you rightly divide the Word of truth (*2 Tim 2: 15*), always remember that God's salvation is based upon one way, and that is through the precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. Regardless of age or time period, "*And without shedding of blood is no remission*" (*Heb 9: 22b*); (*Matt 26: 28*); (*Lk 22: 20*)
7. It is of the utmost importance that as you teach the Word of God that you understand the eternal plan of God for all ages.
8. Finally, let yourself be led by the Holy Spirit, seeking the interpretation of the Scripture and use the applications with caution. Pay special attention to whom God is directly speaking, keeping the Scripture in context.

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER ONE

1. Name 7 principles for studying the Bible.
2. What rules and regulations must we apply to our study of the Bible?
3. Name 13 of the many aspects that make up God's character.
4. Why must we accept what the Bible teaches? Use and explain
(*2 Timothy 3: 16-17*); (*Hebrews 4: 12*); (*Psalms 119: 11*)

CHAPTER TWO



WHERE DID GOD COME FROM?

This is the question in most people's minds, whether they are believers or unbelievers. It is the logical first question, but our human minds are not adequate to fully understand the answer to that question. God is the creator; we are His creation. God is infinite; we are finite. We are trying to understand Eternal God with minds that are blinded by the forces of Satan. Only with God's help can we get a glimpse of the infinite, and by faith accept what we cannot fully understand. In this life we view eternal things as though we are looking through a mist or fog. The Word of God is the light to guide us through that fog. After this life ends, God will lift the fog, and we will see Him either as our God and Savior, or as our God and Holy Judge. It depends on whether or not we believe in Jesus Christ the Son of God and accept him as our Savior. We have the choice, to believe or not to believe, but we have that choice only in this short life on earth. There will be no second chance to accept Jesus Christ as our Savior after we die. *"Behold now is the accepted time; now is the day of Salvation."* (2 Cor 6: 2)

Where then did God come from? Hard as it may be to comprehend, He has always existed. There never was a time when He did not exist. It was God who put the stars in their places and it was God who created our planet earth. Look around you for the evidence of God, then look in God's letter to the human race, the Bible.

All the evidence of creation in the universe makes it is logical to believe that there was a Creator, and that creator was God. *"The heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament showeth His handiwork."* (Ps19: 1) There was no evolution whatsoever in God's creation, for that would advocate a non - creative source, with no one and nothing, in the beginning. God WAS in the beginning and everything that exists, He put in place with the power of His VOICE. We have wonderful examples in creation itself, with each unique type, whether birds or beasts, man or angel, insects or bugs, and even in the fruits, vegetables, trees, herbs, grass and flowers. The familiar words God used to describe His creation were: *"after its kind."* He spoke the words and created everything *"after its kind."*

The eternal existence of God is also substantiated throughout the Word of God; beginning with the first verse of the Bible. *"In the beginning God..." (Gen. 1: 1)* In the book of Job it says, *"The Lord answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said, ... Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth?" (Job 38: 1 & 4)*

Q. HAS JESUS ALWAYS EXISTED?

Jesus is The Son of God. As part of the Trinity, Jesus was present in the beginning. The apostle John tells us that: *"In the beginning was the Word, (Jesus) and the Word was with God and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him and without Him was not any thing made that was made."* (John 1: 1-3)

Q. WHO WAS MELCHIZEDEK?

Q. DID MELCHIZEDEK HAVE A BEGINNING OR END?

Let us examine some very important truths from God's Word about the eternal existence of Jesus the Son of God. There is an important reference from the Old Testament, which we should not overlook, namely "Melchizedek." It is an amazing fact that the first King/Priest of Jerusalem was the Lord Jesus Christ, who was referred to as "Melchizedek" in (Gen 14) He also will be the last and final King/Priest over Jerusalem, and the whole world. Melchizedek could be no one else but Christ, who is "El Elyon" The Most High God. *"And Melchizedek, king of Salem, brought forth bread and wine; and He was the priest of the Most High God. And He blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the Most High God, possessor of heaven and earth: And blessed be the Most High God, who hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave Him tithes of all."* (Gen 14: 18-20)

Now this Scripture does not tell us the whole story as to the Divinity of Melchizedek, so we must look elsewhere for the answer. *"The Lord hath sworn, and will not repent, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek. The Lord at thy right hand shall strike through kings in the day of His wrath. He shall judge among the nations; He shall fill the places with the dead bodies; He shall wound the heads over many countries."* (Ps 110: 4-6) This portion gives us another clue as to this King/Priest called Melchizedek. This Scripture tells us that after the order of this King/Priest, so the Lord will rule the nations. *"So also Christ glorified not Himself to be made an High Priest, but the Father said unto Him, Thou art my Son, today have I begotten thee. As He saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest forever after the order of Melchizedek; Who in the days of His flesh, when He had offered prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto Him that was able to save Him from death, and was heard in that He feared, though He were a Son, yet learned He obedience by the things which He suffered; And being made perfect, He became the Author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey Him, called of God*

an High Priest after the order of Melchizedek.” (Heb 5: 5-10)

“For this Melchizedek, King of Salem (Jerusalem), Priest of the Most High God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him, to whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all; first being, by interpretation, King of righteousness, and after that King of Salem, which is, King of peace; Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like the Son of God, abideth a Priest continually.” (Heb 7: 1-3) “If, therefore, perfection were by the Levitical priesthood (for under it the people received the law), what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchizedek, and not be called after the order of Aaron? For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law. For He of whom these things are spoken pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar. For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood. And it is yet far more evident; for after the similitude of Melchizedek there ariseth another priest, who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment but after the power of an endless life. For He testifieth, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek ... For the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope did, by which we draw near unto God. (For those priests were made without an oath, but this with an oath by Him that said unto Him, The Lord swore and will not repent, Thou art a priest forever after the order of Melchizedek.) By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.” (Heb 7: 11-22) Let us analyze what the Word of truth has to offer us about Jesus Christ, the Eternal Son of God.

1. God the Father's own Eternal Son, is the King/Priest of the Most High God.
2. Melchizedek without any beginning or ending is the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ.
3. Melchizedek has to be Divine and eternal, as He has no beginning or ending. He did not have father or mother, but always existed.
4. Melchizedek, being the King of righteousness, King of Jerusalem, and King of Peace could only be the Lord Jesus Christ. For Christ shall return and rule in righteousness from Jerusalem.
(Rev 19: 11 - Rev 20: 6.)
5. The body of Christ, as the Incarnate one, was prepared before the foundation of the world. He is coequal with God the Father and God the Holy Spirit in the Old Testament. He took upon Himself this fleshly body. The Godhead is known as “The Everlasting,” which never had a beginning or an ending. “And He said unto me, It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.” (Rev 21: 6)
6. Christ's authoritative position as Priest as well as King for eternity is after the order of Judah and Melchizedek, rather than after the order of Levi. The law made nothing perfect, but revealed the necessity of an eternal High Priest, who entered the Holy of Hollies once and forever, who also was from everlasting. This is what Christ fulfilled as a member of the Eternal Godhead.

7. As a Triune God, and each person having the same qualification and characteristics clearly states their eternal existence, without beginning or ending. The incarnate aspect of Christ is but the eternal Godhead taking upon Himself a form of man which He created in order to provide the forgiveness of sins and the gift of eternal life to those who believe.

Q. WHERE WAS GOD IN THE BEGINNING?

It is difficult for us who exist in this temporal realm to realize an "Eternal Past." That is why we ask the question, "Who made God?" There was a beginning or "creation" as we are informed from the Bible. *"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth."* (Gen 1: 1) This does not indicate that this creation was the beginning of God, but rather the beginning of the heaven and the earth. Now let us take another step backward into the countless years of the past. *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ... The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made. In Him was life; and the life was the light of men."* (Jn 1: 1-4) Let us also analyze these verses.

1. All three persons of the Godhead always existed. (He, the Word or Jesus Christ, was God and at the same time was with God.)
2. There was a set time in the schedule of the Eternal Godhead that creation started.
3. All creation is to be attributed to the Triune God who always existed and never was personally part of creation.
4. The source of all life has come from the Eternal Godhead, who is life.
5. Nothing exists apart from the Eternal Godhead.
6. There is sufficient evidence in creation that a Master Mind, our very God had to be behind the scenes bringing these things into being.
7. The Second Person of the Godhead became Incarnate by creating a physical body like unto ours for the purpose of becoming a Redeemer, judging all sin once and forever.
8. All creation demanded a Creator that has always existed. *"The heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament showeth His handiwork."* (Ps 19: 1)

There are some statements which Christ made which should be mentioned in declaring the everlasting existence of the Godhead. First of all we must accept the Biblical record that there is a spiritual realm which is separate from this temporary material realm. *"God is Spirit; and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth."* (Jn 4: 24) That is why we who are totally depraved and dead spiritually must be made alive in the spirit. *"That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again."* (Jn 3: 6-7)

Christ came among us to declare this truth to us. *“Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I Am.”* (Jn 8: 58) He used the verb “To Be,” the ever existing word for God, making Himself equal with God the Father. The Lord Jesus Christ also declared Himself as the Son of God. *“Jesus answered, if I honor Myself. My honor is nothing; it is my Father that honoreth Me, of whom ye say, that He is your God.”* Jn 8: 54. May I therefore conclude that the Godhead has always existed with no beginning nor will there be an ending. God did not evolve nor has creation evolved, but before time began, God always was, without beginning or without ending.

As we begin with the study of difficult biblical questions, it is of the utmost importance that we declare God as the *“Ancient of Days,” “The everlasting One,”* with no beginning nor ending. Understanding the following important factors is also important to answering various questions that you might have about God's creation:

THREE IMPORTANT ASPECTS OF BIBLE TRUTH?

There are three aspects which I want to take you through in this series of questions. They are very important as we study any portion of God's Word. The most important of these three is to understand:

A. The Character Of God.

Unless we have a thorough understanding of just who God is and His great plan for eternity, we will fail to interpret the Bible correctly. Then, we must also understand God's provision for the angelic hosts as well as all mankind. God has created us with the power of choice, or as we often call it:

B. The Volition of men and of angels.

This gives us a personal responsibility as well as a freedom of choice. This also brings us to understand God's creation which is absolutely without any defect.

C. The Creation By God Securely Purified.

God in His sovereignty cannot be questioned as to His creative ability, for He is absolutely sovereign, holy and pure. It was God alone who created all things. Let us study these principles from God's Holy Word. I might add at the very beginning of this study that unless you accept the Bible as authentic and God's Word in it's entirety, you might as well close this textbook and remain in confusion. *“All Scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works.”* 2 Tim 3: 16-17.

Q. WHAT ABOUT THE ASPECT OF GOD'S CHARACTER?

A. THE CHARACTER OF GOD VERIFIED.

We have sufficient evidence from the Bible of the absolute perfect character of Almighty God. Fulfilled prophesy verifies the perfect truthfulness of the Character of God. Many things, God foretold in the Bible have come to pass exactly as God said. The life and death of Jesus Christ verify the perfect Love of God. The fact that God cannot tolerate sin is evidence of His Holiness. The fact that God made a way to pay the penalty for our sin, demonstrates His perfect justice.

Look again at the many aspects of God's character mentioned in chapter 1 and notice that God's character is revealed to anyone who reads the Bible. As a review, God is: **Omnipotent, Omniscient, Omnipresent, sovereign, immutable, absolute and perfect truth, Holy, righteous, impeccable, eternal life, perfect and absolute justice, sum total of perfection, and the source of all love.**

Q. WHAT ABOUT THE ASPECT OF VOLITION OR FREE WILL?

B. VOLITION THROUGH GOD CLASSIFIED.

GOD'S DEALING WITH SIN

The questions may be asked:

Q. WHERE DOES THE TROUBLE OF THIS WICKED LIFE COME FROM?

Q. WHO IS TO BLAME FOR THIS MESS IN WHICH WE LIVE?

Q. WHAT IS THE SOLUTION AND CURE FOR THESE CONDITIONS?

Q. WILL THERE EVER BE A CHANGE FOR THE BETTER?

Well, these questions can easily be asked, but they are more difficult to answer. However, we need to search the Scripture for the answer. As I have previously said, we are definitely not robots or under God's instinctive persuasion. We have been given the freedom of choice. There was one classification of this volition in heaven, where Lucifer and one third of God's angels decided to oppose God, choosing sin, rather than continue under the holiness of God. That choice that the wicked angels made was irreversible and for them there is no point of return to God. However, with mankind, with the height of deception, God has made a way of escape through the sacrifice of His Dear Son. In fact, as God sealed the destiny of His holy angels, so He desires to seal the destiny of His new creation, in Christ Jesus. In this process of dealing with sin, by God, we who were the victims of Satan, become the victory through God.

Here are some important truths to help clarify the predicament in which we find ourselves. Also remember that we cannot blame God for any evil that has come into existence, but rather we must blame

the creatures which brought them upon themselves.

1. The freedom of choice was given to the angelic realm and to the human realm. Through their wrong choices, confusion has been brought upon themselves.
2. The first sin came out of heaven, from the greatest cherub that God created.
3. God alone can cure this whole situation, paying the cost to restore His righteousness at the cross.
4. God knew that by giving His creatures a choice that they would choose the wrong way, but it gave Him the opportunity to judge sin once and forever, thus putting it away.
5. God has judged all sin at the cross, making possible a new creation where sin would never occur again.

God in His Omniscience knows everything, and nothing is hidden from Him. He prepared a way of escape for us finite beings, before the foundation of the earth, so that through our individual choice, we could accept or reject God's provision in removing the barrier of sin. *"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on Him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into judgement, but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in Himself, so hath He given to the Son to have life in Himself; And hath given Him authority to execute judgement also, because He is the Son of man."* Jn 5:24-27. God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit have always existed and always will exist. This is why God's promises of everlasting life to those who believe will stand the test of time.

God has dealt with sin and has judged it. When that final Great White Throne Judgement takes place, there will be an end of sin. Death, hell, Satan with his demons, and humans who are foolish enough to reject God's gift, will be cast into the lake of fire, to remain there forever and ever. That is why God is allowing sin to run its course. God in His Omniscience knows the end from the beginning, and has secured all of His characteristics, which will be established forever in the new heavens and the new earth. There has never been anyone greater than the Godhead, nor will there ever be. The Triune God is supreme and never had a beginning nor ever will have an ending.

Q. WHAT ABOUT THE ASPECT OF CREATION BY GOD SECURELY PURIFIED?

C. THE CREATION BY GOD SECURELY PURIFIED.

According to God's Word, there is a definite plan and strategy with which God is working. God is not the Creator of evil and in His sovereignty, He has an absolutely perfect creation securely purified and ready to be brought forth. This completely new creation which God is planning, will be free from wickedness and will be purer than the finest of gold. These various questions that you may have can freely be answered, when one understands the final purpose of God. God has been allowing sin to run its course. He judged it at the cross and will remove it forever, casting it into the lake of fire with all of the wicked. This will secure God's holiness and righteousness in the new heaven and the new earth. Sin will never appear again in the kingdom of God. (*Dan 9: 24.*)

Christ has paid the complete debt of sin, by His death on the cross, and man is without excuse. *"He that believeth on Him is not condemned; but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God."* *Jn 3: 18.* *"He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him."* *Jn 3:3 6.* There is no excuse whatsoever for anyone to ignore God's purification plan, through His Eternal Son. *"But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through His name."* (*Jn 20: 31*)

We must accept God's eternal existence, and His Creation of all things, otherwise all that we see and handle would have come into existence from nothing. We know that this tremendous creation had to have a Mighty God behind the scenes. The precision in which all the present universe is established is sufficient evidence of an eternal God, who neither had a beginning or ever will have an ending. *"For the invisible things of Him from creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse;"* (*Rom 1: 20*) It would be absolute stupidity to think that all that we behold in the material realm, just happened to come about, out of nothing. The Bible contains the ultimate truth, with the everlasting existence of a Holy God.

God has always existed and always will exist. He has all of the future planned, to glorify His Holy name. God desires to dwell with His creation in perfect harmony, based upon His character. In God's new creation, the new heaven and new earth, all evil will be forever eliminated, and the eternal beauty of the Triune God will shine forth, forever and ever. It will be **Pure** and it will be **Secure** from any influence of sin.

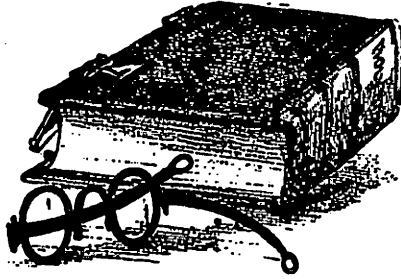
There can be no doubt as to the eternal existence of Almighty God, when one thoroughly understands the existence of life under a marvelous plan of God. If one would deny the eternal existence of God, then you would have to go back into eternity past with a multitude of questions, such as "Who

then began it all?" Praise God we have sufficient evidence from creation and from the Bible, declaring our Almighty and Eternal God.

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER TWO

1. Why does there have to be a Creator, who is eternal?
2. Why does evolution fail to solve the problem?
3. Explain *1 Corinthians 15: 39-50*.
4. What can one learn from the existence of Melchizedek? Scripture please.
5. How does Christ qualify to be both King and Priest?
6. Why would there be a similarity between Melchizedek and Christ?
7. Explain *Hebrews 5: 5-10*.
8. Explain *Psalms 110: 4-6*.
9. Explain *Hebrews 7:1-3* and *Hebrews 7:11-22*.
10. Give seven truths about Jesus Christ, the Eternal Son of God.
11. Why must there be an eternal past if we expect an eternal future? Scripture please.
12. Analyze *John 1:1-4*. Give 5 discoveries from these verses.
13. Name 3 important aspects necessary to understand God's plan as found in the Bible.
14. Why must we know the author of the Bible?
15. How has God dealt with sin? Scripture please.
16. What plans does God have for a purified creation? Scripture please.
17. Explain with your personal study "The Eternal Existence of God."

CHAPTER THREE



WHY WAS LUCIFER CREATED?

A. WHAT WAS LUCIFER'S CHARACTER?

Since God in His omniscience, or all knowing, why did He create Lucifer, who became the devil? Lucifer was also known as “*Serpent*” and “*the wicked one.*” The Bible has the answer to this all important question. Let us turn to the Bible for information concerning the character of Lucifer, when God created him. We know that he was in existence before the creation of the heavens and the earth, for he appeared upon this earth during the days of the first man Adam. However, he had already become the leader of the fallen angels. Let us understand, “*Behold, thou art wiser than Daniel; there is no secret that they can hide from thee.*” (Ezek 28: 3) Ezekiel was informed about this superior angel whom God created as that special cherub, given authority over many angels, as the guard over God's holiness. Here is what God revealed to Ezekiel concerning Lucifer: “*Moreover, the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyre, and say unto him, Thus saith the Lord God: Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, and perfect beauty. Thou hast been in Eden, the garden of God; every precious stone was thy covering, the sardius, topaz, and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx, and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald, and the carbuncle, and gold; the workmanship of thy timbrels and of thy flutes was prepared in thee in the day that thou was created. Thou art the anointed cherub that covereth, and I have set thee so; thou wast upon the holy mountain of God; thou hast walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.*” (Ezek 28:11-15) Let us analyze and examine this perfect superior angel of God.

1. Lucifer was created wiser than man. (Ezek 28:3)
Total wisdom given to him by God. (Ezek 28:12)
2. Lucifer had perfect beauty, as the most beautiful creature that God created. (Ezek 28:12)

3. Lucifer entered Eden, the garden of God. (*Ezek 28:13a*)
4. Lucifer was covered with wealth and beauty by God.

Sardius = A very precious stone to be used as the sixth foundation of the New Jerusalem. A royal stone of God. It was the stone placed in the first row of the breastplate (*Rev 4:3; Rev 21:20; Exod 28:17; Exod 39:10*) black and white layers

Topaz = The topaz with the green tint was held as a very precious stone, and it will be the 9th foundation of the New Jerusalem. (*Rev 21:20*) This stone was included in the first row of the breastplate of the temple, along with the Sardius. (*Ex 28:17; Ex 39:10*) Yellow and various colors.

Diamond = One of the most valuable gems that we know was given to Lucifer in all of his gorgeous array. It is one of the hardest substance in crystal that we know, and God placed this in perhaps a special breastplate for Lucifer, as His main guard at God the Father's private abode.

Beryl= This special stone was enclosed with gold in the fourth row of the breastplate. (*Ex 28:20; Ex 39:13*) It has a sea green color, and was the color of the wheels of the carriage of the four creatures which took the place of Lucifer when he sinned. (*Ezek 1:4-16*)

Onyx = This stone was in the garden of Eden. (*Gen 2:12*) This stone was set in the ephod as well as the breastplate. (*Ex 25:7*) The names of the children of Israel were engraved upon the onyx. (*Ex 28:9*) It was also one of the stones in the fourth row of the breastplate. (*Ex 28:20*) A black stone.

Jasper = This stone will be used as the first foundation of the New Jerusalem, as well as the walls. (*Rev 21:11,18*) Also in Revelation the one who sat upon the throne had the glow as of a jasper stone. (*Rev 4:3*) Maybe red, yellow or brown.

Sapphire = This stone will be used as the second foundation of the New Jerusalem. (*Rev 21:19*) It is a transparent blue stone. As Moses was on Mount Sinai, he and others saw God's feet as He stood on a sapphire stone, clear as crystal. (*Ex 24:10*) The second row on the breastplate was of emerald, sapphire, and a diamond. (*Ex 28:18; Ex 39:11*) Ezekiel saw the appearance as a throne with a sapphire stone. (*Ezek 1:26; Ezek 10:1*)

Emerald = This stone was set in the second row of the breastplate. (*Ex 28:18; Ex 39:11*) It is of a

bright green color. It will be the fourth foundation in the New Jerusalem. (*Rev 21:19*)

Carbuncle = This stone was set in the first row of the breastplate. (*Ex 28:17; Ex 39:10*) Garnet in color.

Gold = This of course is one of the most valuable and beautiful minerals and sought for by all. God has spared nothing to array Lucifer with all the beauty, and created him with wisdom beyond all of the angels. His surroundings had to be the most gorgeous in the angelic setting.

Timbrels = The timbrels which Lucifer had, would be like our tambourines, the only difference is that the timbrels have their bells across the diameter of the hoop. The plural of timbrel, indicate that he had other angels under his authority, with musical abilities.

Flutes = This instrument of music is made from a long wooden pipe and is blown into, using the fingers over holes to make the sound of music. God had given these instruments to Lucifer, "*in the day that thou wast created.*" (*Ezek 28: 13b*)

5. Lucifer was chief of all of the Cherubim and was especially anointed by God. (*Ezek 28: 14*)

The anointed Cherub = The Seraphim were special angels designated for reverence to God, for worship and for service. (*Isa 6: 2-3*) The Cherubim were special angels as guards. (*Gen 3: 24; Ex 25: 16-20; Ezek 1: 5*) Lucifer was a special anointed cherub to guard the border entering into the private abode of God the Father. God had appointed him to this highest position. This gave Lucifer the special privilege of being on the holy mountain of God. No doubt there must be also a special border of fire stones along this border of God's private estate. Lucifer had the Divine capability of walking in the midst of these stones of fire.

Have you grasped the picture of what Lucifer had been given by God? God's creation of this anointed Cherub had to be of the greatest personality of all the angelic hosts. He was perfect in all his ways from the day that he was created. Just as Michael the arch angel has a great army of angels at his command (*Rev 12: 7-9*), so Lucifer must have had a great army of angels under his authority. He was under the sovereignty of God, and all went well, "*until iniquity was found in thee.*" (*Ezek 28: 14b*)

B. WHAT WAS LUCIFER'S POWER?

Evidently Lucifer had great respect among all the angelic hosts. Lucifer's power was so great that Michael the arch angel could not bring accusations against him. (*Jude 9*) Lucifer's power and influence spread so far in God's heavenly kingdom that he was able to draw one third of all of God's angels to follow him in his iniquity. (*Rev 12:4*) We must remember the great power that this fallen angel has, even to this very day. He is called "*The Prince of the Power of the Air,*" (*Eph 2: 2*) His name has changed but he still has mighty power as the Prince of the power of the air. But all of this is still under the sovereignty of God. God alone can bind satan and prevent him from disrupting God's work. The name given to him by God was lucifer, which means "*The morning star.*" But when iniquity was found in Lucifer, the Bible refers to him using different names such as satan and the devil, as well as descriptive titles.

Q. WHAT TWO NAMES WERE GIVEN TO LUCIFER?

- 1. Satan** - This word is used 19 times as a proper word in the Old Testament and is one of his principal names. We find it used 36 times in the New Testament. He is a real person and is one to be dealt with in this present life, as we will see. Were it not for the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit, we as believers would be confronted with constant fear of Satan. But praise God, we have both our Advocate in heaven and the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit for our protection.
- 2. The Devil** - This is the other title given to Lucifer after he sinned against his Creator. It is found 60 times in the New Testament, and does not always refer directly to the one Devil, but many times to the fallen angels as tools of the Devil. There are other names contributed to Satan and the Devil, which we will describe, to give a better understanding of his tactics, when iniquity was found in him.

Q. WHAT DESCRIPTIVE NAMES ARE USED FOR THE DEVIL?

- 1. The Tempter** - "*And when the tempter came to Him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.*" (*Matt 4:3*) Then also, "*For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labor be in vain.*" (*1 Thess 3: 5*) In just these two passages, we have a picture of the power that Satan has, both to tempt Christ in the wilderness and those of the early church.
- 2. Beelzebub** - "*But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out demons, but by Beelzebub, the prince of the demons ... And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I, by Beelzebub, cast out demons, by whom do*

your sons cast them out? Therefore, they shall be your judges. But if I cast out demons by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come to you.” (Matt 12:24-28; Mk 3: 22; LK 11: 15-19) Here it is mentioned that this powerful Satan is “the prince of the demons.”

3. **The Enemy** - *“Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house; and his disciples came unto Him, saying, Explain unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom, but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are the angels.” (Matt 13: 36-39)*
4. **The wicked and evil one** - *“When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth it not, then cometh the wicked one, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the wayside.” (Matt. 13: 19) These truths from God's Word reveal the tremendous power of Satan, as he is very alive to his evil intentions. (1 Jn 2: 13-14; 1 Jn 5: 18)*
5. **Belial** - *“Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers; for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?” (2 Cor 6: 14-15) The conflict of these evil forces, led by Satan are real and need to be confronted by the Holy Spirit, who lives within us. “Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is the world.” (1 Jn 4:4) As we examine these various Scriptures, concerning Satan, may we be aware of his great power, but praise God for the Sovereignty of Almighty God.*
6. **Adversary** - *“Be sober, be vigilant, because your adversary, the devil, like a roaring lion walketh about, seeking whom he may devour. Whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.” (1 Pet 5:8-9) Here again we have the far reaching wicked activity of Satan, which we must resist by faith in the Lord Jesus Christ.*
7. **Deceiver** - *“And that great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil and Satan, who deceiveth the whole world; he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.” (Rev 12:9) This of course is written as a future event, when Michael the Arch angel and his army cast Satan out of heaven, when the fifth trumpet sounds. (Rev 9:1-11; Rev 12:7-10)*
8. **The Accuser of the Brethren** - *“Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our*

God, and the power of His Christ; for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, who accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto death.” (Rev 12: 10b-11) This again shows the great power that Satan has, being able to come into the presence of God and accuse the believers. But God, has provided His Son, as our Advocate. *“My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous; And He is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.” (1 Jn 2: 1-2)*

- 9. The Great Red Dragon** - *“And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and, behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his head. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven and did cast them to earth; and the dragon stood before the woman who was ready to be delivered, to devour her child as soon as it was born.” (Rev 12: 3-4)* This again shows the terrific power that Satan continues to have. He would have devoured the Christ child, if it were possible, but God, Protected His Eternal Son, by having Joseph take Him to Egypt. *(Matt 2:13-18)* This passage also shows the satanic power that will be when the Roman Empire is revived during the terrible and great tribulation. *(Dan 7:15-28)*
- 10. The Father of Lies, and Murderer** - *“Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own; for he is a liar, and the father of it.” (Jn 8: 44)* This reveals to us the vast power and great range of influence that satan's wickedness has traveled. The first murder by Cain with his brother Abel has also been satan's evil act. *(Gen 4:1-11)* He of course was afraid of *“The seed of the Woman” (Gen 3:15)*, so he thought to destroy Abel who was obedient unto God.
- 11. The Father of sin** - *“He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil.” (1 Jn 3:8)* The power given to Lucifer was so great that it took the very Eternal Son of God to break through that barrier of sin and remove it, in order to save our souls. So, let us study the Bible thoroughly concerning the power of Satan as declared by it. There are some 83 references throughout the Bible referring to this evil fallen angel, and some 70 refer directly to Satan or Devil. We have sufficient warnings against this evil empire of fallen angels.

Q. HOW DID LUCIFER BECOME SATAN OR THE DEVIL?

Q. WHAT WERE THE FIRST SINS?

Because of the powerful position that God granted to Lucifer, that anointed cherub, giving him the freedom of choice, we must constantly be aware of him. However, we Christians have God the Holy Spirit dwelling within us to help us understand the wiles of the devil. Satan is not alone, but billions fallen angels are in teamwork against God. They all have been granted freedom of choice and have become disobedient, as did Lucifer. All of these fallen angels are united against God and desire to do their own thing. The Book of Revelation so thoroughly brings out this truth, and we need to study the tactics of these demons and above all *“Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil.” (Eh 6:11)*

Q. WHAT DID SATAN SAY TO GOD?

Satan in his lust for greater power, said the following:

“For thou hast said in thine heart,

I will ascend into heaven.

I will exalt my throne above the stars of God.

I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation.

I will ascend above the heights of the clouds;

I will be like the Most High.” (Is 14: 13 - 14)

Here we have the cause which brought on the effect, of Lucifer becoming Satan and the devil. These are the first sins ever committed in God's creation. God knew all of this would take place, in His omniscience, and the question could be asked: “Why then did God create such an angel?” We could also ask: “Since God knows all things, why wasn't Satan destroyed immediately?” These are very important questions and they will be answered in the course of time. We need to gather more facts before we make our final answer to these questions. Many other questions are related to this study of the evil forces and they will be considered as we proceed. Most Biblical questions are related to the sinning of Lucifer, as it was through him that corruption came into God's creation. May I remind you that when Lucifer was created, he was perfect in all of his ways and was without sin. *“Thou was perfect in thy ways from the*

day that thou was created, till iniquity was found in thee.” (Ezek 28:15) God did not force Lucifer to remain sinless but gave him a choice.

Our emphasis here is to show the great power which Satan had and continues to have. The five “I wills” (Is 14: 13-14) were uttered by Lucifer, while he had vast power, and commanded many angels. He wanted to ascend above the border line of God's private abode. He wanted to be more than an angel, placing his throne above all. He wanted to rule over all creatures. He wanted the top most position in the heavenlies. Finally he wanted to be on an equal power level with Almighty God. He is still working toward that goal and God has not taken away all of his power, but nevertheless he is still under the sovereignty of God. Yes, Satan has been judged at the Cross, and he and his fallen angels will eventually be cast into the lake of fire.

Q. WHAT DOES SATAN DO TODAY?

THE CHARACTER AND POWERFUL WORK OF SATAN

With these references to Satan, we conclude that he is both an enemy of God, the holy angels and mankind. Satan continually sows his evil tares, but will eventually come to his end in the eternal lake of fire. *“The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom, but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are the angels. As, therefore, the tares are gathered and burned in the fire, so shall it be in the end of the age. The Son of man shall send forth His angels, and they shall gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and them who do iniquity, and shall cast them into a furnace of fire; there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.” (Matt 13: 38-43) This again declares unto us that this battle with Satan will go on until the end of the millennial age, when Satan will be cast into the lake of fire, with all of his billions of demons. (Rev 20: 7-10)*

When you examine the wealth that God placed in the hands of Lucifer, and the beauty, with an outstanding personality, you then can understand how he was able to convince one out of every three of the holy angels to become followers of him. His duty before God, as an anointed cherub, was the chief guard over the holiness of God. He was given the highest position in heaven and had great influence over the angelic host. He was like a five star general, and a great prince with his own headquarters. The Bible records that he became proud and greedy for even more power.

Q. DOES SATAN STILL HAVE HIS POWER?

Although he has lost his rights as God's supreme guard, he still has great power, as we see by following events recorded about his past, watching his influence in the present and reading Bible prophesy about the future. We would have thought that God would have dealt with Satan immediately, when he

committed the first sin in heaven. But God, has reason for patiently waiting as we will discover. So, let the Bible speak and reveal just a few of Satan's sinful acts of tremendous power. May we always remember that God does not cause his creatures to rebel and sin against Him, but in His grace, He gives the angelic hosts and mankind the choice. God can never be the author of wickedness or sin, for He is absolutely holy and impeccable! God is aware of every thought word and deed, as He was aware of the plans of Lucifer in his heavenly revolt.

Q. DID SATAN FALL ALONE?

Q. HOW DID ONE THIRD OF ALL OF GOD'S ANGELS FALL INTO SIN?

With the highest position that God allocated to Lucifer, in the beginning of the heavenly creation, it stands to reason that Lucifer had a private army of angels at his command. His domain must have been with great splendor, with the covering of precious jewels, and the instruments of music. The Bible records the splendor and pomp which was his along with his immense power. He certainly was respected by the angelic hosts. How he convinced one third of God's holy angels to follow him, is not known, but the results speak for themselves. It probably was easy to convince his own private army to rebel against God, for they were already under his command. I am sure that he held many extravagant feasts, to persuade these angels of his great power. All that we have to signify that he drew these angels into his net is, *"And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, to devour her child as soon as it was born."* (Rev 12:3-4) These two verses involve several powerful acts of Satan, but for now, we merely want to deal with the heavenly scene.

After Lucifer fell into sin (Isa 14:12-14), and still had great power, as God temporarily withheld His judgement, Lucifer gathered all of these angels into his plan for self rule, and then commanded them to take their abode upon the newly created earth. This was declared by him to be his domain. How do we know this? The Word of God refers to Satan as the "God of This World": *"But if our gospel be hid it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them."* (2 Cor 4:3-4) We are also aware of Satan's great power and influence on the earth, and his present access to Heaven to accuse Christians before God. He will have identification with the coming revival of the Roman Empire, predicted in the book of Daniel. This will happen when Satan is thrown out of heaven for the final time, along with all of his demons. However, at this time let's search the Scripture and find out what happened upon the earth.

Q. WHAT HAPPENED TO THE EARTH WHEN SATAN WAS FIRST CAST OUT OF HEAVEN?

Q. HOW DID THE EARTH BECOME VOID?

There are a few things which we must consider concerning the power of Satan. We know that God's creation is always good. He created the heavens and the earth, but we read, *"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void: and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters."* (Gen 1:1-2) Some scholars believe "... was without form ..." in (Gen 1: 2) can be interpreted: *"The earth became without form and void. ..."* The thought is that God created the Heaven and Earth perfect but when Satan was thrown out of Heaven the first time, the earth became marred and less than perfect. The other way of looking at it is that the earth was like a formless piece of clay until the potter formed something useful out of it. The Genesis account does indicate several days and several levels of creation used by God. Regardless of how we look at these various interpretations, we have many other Biblical statements that reveal the powerful hand of Satan. We know that he has tremendous influence upon the earth, and as believers, we are to, *"Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil."* (Eh 6:11) Let's examine some of Satan's power: *"Who didst weaken the nations."* (Isa 14:12b) and: *"Is this the man who made the earth to tremble, who did shake kingdoms, who made the world like a wilderness, and destroyed its cities, who opened not the house of his prisoners?"* (Isa 14: 16b-17)

Q. WHAT PRISONERS ARE BEING KEPT BY SATAN?

Q. WHAT HAPPENED TO THE OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS WHO DIED?

Q. WERE OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS KEPT TOGETHER WITH SINNERS?

Q. ARE THE CAPTIVES STILL CONFINED?

FROM SHEOL TO PARADISE

(Isa 14: 16b-17) indicates that Satan has been very active upon this earth for thousands of years. You may remember that when Christ died on the cross that He went down into Sheol and led captivity captive. This was necessary to release the saints of the Old Testament, and bring them to their heavenly Paradise. During Christ's earthly ministry He gave that illustration of the rich man and Lazarus. *"And there was a certain rich man, who was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day. And there was a certain beggar, named Lazarus, who was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table; ... And it came to pass that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into the Abraham's bosom; the rich man also died and was buried; And in hades he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; ... And Abraham said, Son, remember ... and beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed."* (Lk 1: 9-26a) This indicated that all the dead went to

Sheol, but the Old Testament saints were separated from the unregenerate by a great gulf. That is why we read, *"Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive."* (Ps 68: 18a) We are also assured that the Saints are not in sheol, as the thief on the cross did not go to sheol, but to Paradise. (Lk 23: 39-43)

Q. DOES SATAN INDWELL OTHER CREATURES?

SATANIC POWER TO INDWELL OTHER CREATURES.

Satan declared the earth to be his new domain, in spite of the fact, or maybe because of the fact that God made man in His own image, to dwell upon the earth. From the day mankind was created, Satan made plans to deceive them and bring them into his temporary kingdom and to share his ultimate fate. He promises happiness and satisfaction, but produces emptiness and misery and ultimately eternal separation from God. *"There is a way that seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death."* (Pr 16: 25)

Satan chose the most beautiful animal in the garden of Eden to deceive Eve. The serpent, prior to the serpent's curse, was that animal. (Gen 3:1-7) Certainly Eve would not have tarried long in the presence of a serpent or snake in it's present form. We can only speculate what the serpent looked like before it was cursed and changed by God, nevertheless the deception worked and the first sin upon earth was committed, by Eve and then by Adam and they became totally depraved.

Humans lost their fellowship with God that day, but God gave them hope when he promised a battle between the "Seed of the Woman" (Jesus) and the "Serpent" (Satan). Jesus would have his heel wounded (temporary wound) by Satan, but Satan would have his head wounded (fatal wound) by Jesus. *"And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel."* (Gen 3:14- 15)

After being used by Satan to deceive Adam and Eve, the serpent was also cursed and took on its new body which slithers on the ground and is still one of the least liked of animals. The sins of Adam and Eve gave Satan freedom to brainwash and indwell earthly creatures especially mankind. This became a great victory for Satan, and his billions of fallen angels began to indwell human beings.

Satan's efforts continued to be focused on locating and eliminating that "Seed of the Woman," which was going to bruise his head. If he could succeed in infiltrating all of flesh, then the Messianic hope would be made null and void. God in His omniscience was aware of Satan's tactics, and it became very costly to stop this "Takeover" by Satan. It meant that a world wide flood was necessary, preserving but eight believing souls on Noah's ark. Noah's son Shem was chosen by God for the lineage of the Messiah. The flood was God's way of keeping Satan from possessing and corrupting the whole human race. Had Satan succeeded with indwelling all human beings, it would have been difficult to find a pure virgin through whom God could form the body for Jesus who was both God and Man. **BUT GOD, always**

knows the end from the beginning and claims the victory.

It becomes obvious that God did not take away this tremendous power from Lucifer, and it takes the watchful eye of Almighty God to control this satanic power. As we study the Bible, we see the various satanic attacks against God's chosen race of people in an all out attempt to destroy the Messianic hope. We marvel at the patience and long-suffering of God as He waited for "*the fullness of time*", before sending His Eternal Son, as our Redeemer. (*Gal 4:4-7*) "*How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation?*" (*Heb 2: 3*)

Q. WHAT WILL BE SATAN'S END?

C. WHAT WILL BE LUCIFER'S DOWNFALL?

In the Bible, we read of the beginning and the end of Lucifer's power, and also of his downfall and eternal judgement. Yes, God could have cast Satan and all of his demons into the Lake of fire immediately, but that would not solve the possibility and problem of future sin. God allowed His creatures to have a choice to do right or wrong, and He is allowing the cup of iniquity to fill up, so that He can judge it once and forever. God is in the process of dealing with sin and removing it from His creation forever and ever! We read, "*For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.*" (*1 Jn 3: 8*) and "... *He appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself.*" (*Heb 9: 26*) God has been waiting for man "... *to finish the transgression, ...*" then God will proceed "... *to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness.*" (*Dan 9: 24*) "*For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.*" (*Rom 3:23*) "*For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ, our Lord.*" (*Rom 6:23*) Since the wages of sin had to be paid before the gift of God could be made, then someone had to die. It had to be a sinless creature in the form of flesh, and the Eternal Son of God was the only one to pay the price. God declared that the seed of the woman, Jesus, would do the job.

We are familiar with the prediction by God in the garden of Eden, "*And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; He shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise His heel*" (*Gen 3:15*) This was further promised. "*Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call His name Immanuel.*" (*Isa 7:14*) This was fulfilled in the fullness of time. "*But when the fullness of time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying Abba, Father.*" (*Gal 4: 4-5*) God entered into the arena, the battle for human souls, He provided His Son as the supreme sacrifice to pay the debt of sin and defeat the power of Satan.

The question, "Why was Lucifer Created?" has not been fully answered to this point, but we have noted that God created him as a Cherub with terrific power, full of all wisdom, an outstanding personality who was given the highest position in Heaven. He was given the freedom of choice, and was not forced

by God to become that evil Satan. That was his personal choice, which God was fully aware of, and had prepared in advance to deal with such a choice. God knew that He would have to deal with these wicked forces which would oppose Him, and decided to deal with them on the highest level. God could have declared these evil forces dormant and never allowing them to express themselves, but that would have deprived both angels and mankind of the freedom of choice. This was against God's principles.

We also ask the question:

Q. WHY WERE ANY OF US SINNERS CREATED?

Let us list the reasons for evil to express itself in God's economy. God always has a reason for every action which He takes and also which He allows to come to pass. God has graciously allowed freedom of choice to both the angels and mankind. We are different from animals, for animals have only instinct within, not reasoning and a God given conscience and soul. God did not make animals in His image but He did make man in His image. (*Gen 1: 26*)

THE FREEDOM OF CHOICE FOR HUMANS AND ANGELS

1. To manifest His grace upon His creation.
2. To allow the cup of iniquity to be fully completed so that it could be judged once and forever.
3. God desired only to have those angelic hosts serve Him as their personal choice, separating the fallen angels from the Holy angels. These fallen angels were not deceived, but chose to follow Lucifer, and therefore sealed their destination forever.
4. God used this method to finish transgression, and to make an end of sin forever. (*Dan 9: 24*)
5. God desired to make reconciliation for iniquity among the human beings, who were born in sin. (*Dan 9: 24*);
6. God desired to establish everlasting righteousness and defeat the power of the evil one forever.
7. God desires to dwell with His creation in perfect righteousness and peace forever.
8. God the Father desires to anoint His Eternal Son as the Incarnate One, who made possible the removal of sin once and forever through His death, and resurrection.

Satan was defeated at the cross, when Christ died for the sins of the whole world. His sentence has not yet been carried out, for the final battle has not been fought. God is in no hurry, nor is He frustrated, for in His Omniscience, His perfect plans will all be fulfilled. The Most High God is allowing Satan to run his course of wickedness until the appointed time. Our Mighty God is also allowing the human beings to make their choice, as to whether to accept the pardon He offers them or to reject it. *“What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousness with God? God forbid. For He saith to Moses, I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion. So, then, it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that showeth mercy.”* (Rom 9:14-16) Understanding the character of God, we know that He wants to show mercy on everyone. Receiving that mercy depends on each individuals choice. *“The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness, but is long suffering toward us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.”* (2 Pet 3: 9)

Satan, being judged at the cross, is running his course to eternal destruction, ending in the lake of fire. There, he and all of his billions of demons will remain forever and ever. *“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever.”* (Rev 20:10) God will not have to send special tormentors into the lake of fire to torment satan, that devil, but those fallen angels, and unregenerate men will all be there with him because of his deception. They will torment him and keep on accusing him, day and night forever and ever. It will be everlasting death, with no escape. Love will be unheard of in the lake of fire and all will dwell in an eternal hate. The rejection of the Eternal Son of God is the unpardonable sin, and will result in the eternal wrath of God. It is not **the sin** question, but rather **the Son** question that determines our destiny.

Lucifer's downfall has been enormous, being cast out of God's eternal plans forever and ever. Lucifer who was in the highest of positions among God's creatures, will be brought down to the deepest of depths. This is what the Bible says about the final judgement of Satan, that will happen as he attempts to fight against the Son of God in Jerusalem, after the thousand year reign of Christ and just before the Great White Throne Judgement: *“And when the thousand years are ended, Satan shall be loosed out of prison, and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle; the number is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city; and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever.”* (Rev 20: 7-10) There will be no rest whatsoever, with continual tormenting day and night forever and throughout eternity to come. With the wisdom of Satan, he is no doubt aware of this possibility, but has been given so much power that he thinks that he can destroy God's final plans, with his powerful grip on this planet called earth. BUT GOD will have His will done, regardless of the opposition and will bring

sin to its final end, ushering in eternal righteousness.

CONCLUSION

God's great plan for all ages will come to pass. God did not force Lucifer to rebel, but gave him sufficient wisdom to be satisfied. Lucifer of his own free will chose to set up his own domain forcing God to condemn him, his fallen angels and all humans whose names are not written in God's book of life. This all gave the Triune God the opportunity to remove the possibility of sin once and forever, by judging it at the cross. Giving the freedom of choice to the greatest creature, who was full of all wisdom, did not make God the author of sin, but rather Lucifer. This Lucifer was not under any pressure to rebel against God, but he did it of his own free will. However, God in His omniscience prepared for such action and was able to put a judgement on all unrighteousness, condemning the sum total of all sin forever. We marvel with the songwriter, "*Oh the love that drew salvation's plan, oh the grace that brought it down to man, Oh the gulf that God did span and Calvary!*"

Time is no element with the Triune God, He has always existed, but His creation in its entirety had a beginning and is subject to the ravages of time. We who are creations in time can only think in terms of time. All creation except the angels and mankind are under the predominant control of their Creator. They each do their thing, "after its kind," and they know nothing else but that. However, the angels and mankind have been given the freedom of choice and can choose what they wish. Angels and mankind had beginnings but have souls that will exist through eternity, either in harmony and fellowship with God or in eternal judgment for not accepting God's Son, Jesus Christ. We are not robots or puppets but free agents made and created by God in God's image. We often ask:

Q. WHY ARE WE DIFFERENT FROM ALL OTHER CREATIONS?

God had the following reasons to give both the angels and mankind the freedom of choice:

1. God wanted something that He created to choose Him through freedom of choice.
2. It was God's method to allow sin to run its course and then to judge it once and forever. (*Dan 9:24*)
3. God wanted the perfect sinless fellowship with His creation, upon which He breathed to make them living souls. (*Gen 2:7*)
4. God has dealt with all opposition to His character, establishing everlasting righteousness. (*Dan 9:24*)

As we conclude this chapter may we be aware of God's great love toward all of His creation. In His Omniscience, God knows the end from the beginning. God knows the results before all of His creation runs its course. Since time is no issue with Almighty God, every preparation for eternity to come has been established in God's eternity of the past. We as finite beings cannot understand this and we must accept it by faith. "*Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.*" (*Hebrews 11: 1*) May we also remember that nothing is hidden from our eternal God. God is aware of your every thought,

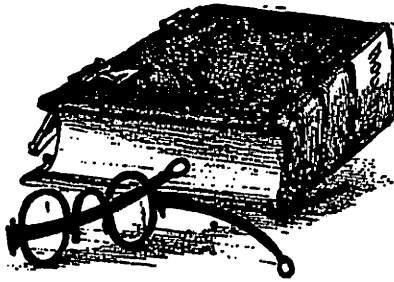
word and deed! You cannot hide from God or run away from His sovereignty. Since God knows the end of everything, at the beginning, what can you and I scheme to do without God's knowledge? Even though God knows all things, He is still interested in His own adopted children individually. He is aware of our short comings and is ready to help us overcome the power of Satan and our sinful nature.

If we thoroughly understand these principles according to the Bible, then we can also thoroughly understand those difficult questions. We need to study by God's rules rather than by man's pre-conceived notions. We must realize that when God created Lucifer, He created him perfect in all of his ways. Lucifer was the greatest creature whom God created and could have remained at the very highest level in God's command. He was very close to the Triune God and had a great command of angels under his authority. He became the arch enemy of God, **desiring** to be like the Most High God, rather than subservient to the Most High God. Although God did not **force** Lucifer in any way to oppose the Godhead, yet He did allow him to make his own choice, as to whether he would continue under the authority of God, or use his own will power to work against his Creator. God may test the allegiance of His creatures, but He never forces them to do evil. *"Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God; for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth He any man: But ever man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin; and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death."* (James 2:13-15.) This principle of God applies to both the angelic hosts as well as all mankind.

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER THREE

1. Describe the character of Lucifer. (*Ezek 28:11-15*)
2. What did all those precious gems which covered Lucifer represent?
3. What was the responsibility of Lucifer in the heaven?
4. When Lucifer was created, was he evil? Scripture please.
5. Lucifer, when created, had a special anointing. Why?
6. Write briefly concerning Lucifer's God given power.
7. What two names were given to Lucifer when he sinned?
8. Give Lucifer's descriptive names and explain. Scripture.
9. Where was the first sin committed? By whom? How? (*Isa 14:12-14*)
10. Who made God's created earth like a wilderness? Scripture.
11. Who destroyed cities and retained the Old Testament saints in Sheol? Give Scripture.
12. When were Old Testament saints released from Sheol? Scripture.
13. Where is Satan's domain at present? Scripture.
14. Can Satan do as he pleases at this present time? Scripture.
15. Explain (*Revelation 12: 3-4*)
16. Explain (*Isaiah 14:12b & 14:16b-17*)
17. Explain (*2 Corinthians 4: 4*)
18. Can Satan and his demons indwell people? Can they indwell believers? Scripture please.
19. When and where was Satan defeated?
20. Give your reason as to why Lucifer was created.
21. Give 8 reasons why God permitted sin to express itself.
22. What will be the final judgement of the sum total of all evil, death and hell? Scripture please.

CHAPTER FOUR



WHERE DID MAN COME FROM?

A. THE CREATION OF THE FIRST MAN ADAM.

The creation of man was something beyond the understanding of the angels, and was of great significance. The Triune God agreed to create human beings in their likeness. *“And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness; and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them.”*

(Gen 1: 26-27) “And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.” (Gen 2: 7) This was the most outstanding creation that God made, which was difference from the angels and made in the likeness of God. Now we know that, *“God is a Spirit; and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.” (Jn 4: 24)* We also know that God always existed in the realm of the Spirit, so how would we have been in the likeness of God? This question can only be answered as we realize that a body was prepared for the Eternal Son of God before the foundation of the world. *“Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you,” (1 Pet 1: 20)* It must then be evident that the second Person of the Trinity took upon Himself, through the incarnation, the form of a man and in the likeness of man from the very beginning of creation. He came into the world in the form of a baby, conceived by God the Holy Spirit, but that complete body was created before the foundation of the world. God had a special purpose in doing this, and it is clearly set forth in the plan of God. God in His omniscience was aware that when Satan rebelled against God that he wanted to claim a domain of his own and he chose the earth.

God, in His limitless wisdom, had a superb plan which He established before He created a time period. He knew that by giving the angels and mankind the freedom of choice that unholiness would corrupt His creation. Therefore, God made plans to deal with sin, allowing it to run its course, judge it at the cross and sentence it together with all the ungodly to an eternity of a living death with the wrath of

God. In order for this judgement to be just, God had to take on a human form and become the sacrifice as well as the sacrificer to pay the debt of sin. So before the foundation of the world, the second Person in the Trinity agreed to become Incarnate. God had a special purpose of making mankind a living soul and spirit. God could have suppressed anything opposite of Himself, but God chose to deal with sin directly, once and forever. Now we are waiting for that great culmination when sin as well as time will be no more.

The creation of the first man Adam had its purpose in the eternal plan of God. No changes ever have to be made with what God has planned to do. This first man Adam was necessary, so that the second Adam may provide life for those who believe. *“For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive; But every man in his own order: Christ the first fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at His coming.”* (1 Cor 15: 22-23) In order for the Triune God to make possible a resurrection unto eternity with God, there had to be a resurrection of Christ as the first fruits of them that slept. (1 Cor 15: 20-21) The natural man came first in creation, and then the spiritual man followed. *“And so it is written, The first man, Adam, was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a life-giving spirit. However, that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual. The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven.”* (1 Cor 15: 45-47) God in a wonderful way has used the creation of mankind to deal with the question of sin. That is why a body was created for the Eternal Son of God before the foundations of the world so that through the creation of man, God would condemn sin in the flesh and remove it forever from the presence of His new creation of the future.

Q. WHAT WAS ADAM'S TEST?

B. THE TEST OF THE FIRST MAN ADAM.

As we study the entrance of sin into this world, may we be mindful that the first sin occurred among the angels and 1/3rd of all the angels were rebellious against God. This all had occurred, under the influence of Satan, and these holy angels became fallen angels, or demons. Through the subtlety of Satan, Eve was deceived and disobeyed the commandment of God and also caused Adam to sin. Sin having entered the realm of man, caused all of nature to be cursed. Man became totally depraved. God had given Adam the responsibility of tending to the beautiful garden of Eden. However, because of sin, he was cast out of the garden and was forced to live in a cursed world and labor by the sweat of his brow. Eve would now bear children under great pain because of her sin. (Gen 2: 7-3: 24) God knew that man and a third of all angels would fail, and provision was made in advance to deal with the situation. The test that God placed upon man was simple but of great importance.

This crucial test upon the first man Adam, revealed something to these fallen angels. As Satan possessed the most beautiful animal in the garden of Eden, he discovered that he could also possess human beings. This led Satan to steal the earthly domain of God and make it into his own kingdom. We will discuss the entire impact of this in the next chapter. However, for the time being, we must be aware that this world system is under the power of Satan, but is limited by the sovereignty of God. *“But if*

our Gospel be hidden, it is hidden to them that are lost, In whom the god of this age hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God should shine unto them.” (2 Cor 4: 3-4) Satan has great influence around the world and has been in the process of deceiving mankind from the beginning of time upon this planet earth. The deception he has used up to the present time is but a forerunner of the deceit of the end times, when the beast takes over under the power of Satan and the dictators of the world perform their evil. Read my Biblical textbook, “One World Government Under Satan, Versus The Eternal Kingdom of God.”

Today it looks as though the evil forces are winning out and the righteous laws of God are continually ignored. But this is far from being right, for God's method of dealing with sin is entirely different. God has ways and means past our finding out. Understanding the perfect plan of God gives us the clue to how God deals with these issues.

Now let us further study the results of Adam's first sin. Remember that Adam and Eve enjoyed a perfect environment and were completely cared for by their Creator. They were also taught by their Creator in the cool of the evening. They were not aware of any evil whatsoever. They knew to converse with God, and were fully developed as adults. God did not neglect them in any way. They lived in an earthly Paradise with everything provided. God was their daily teacher who would come and walk and talk with them. Our first forefathers had all that anyone could desire before God. They were under the authority of their God, but were not robots. By that time heaven had already been contaminated with sin through the fallen angels. One trait that these fallen angels had was that they could possess and speak through other creatures. This is what happened in the Garden of Eden when Satan spoke to Eve through the most beautiful animal of the Garden, while God was out of sight. The whole life story of mankind was about to change when the Tempter came their way. Adam and Eve fell into sin and the whole scene of events changed.

Q. WHAT WAS THE CONSEQUENCE OF ADAM'S FAILURE?

C. THE RESULTS IN THE FIRST MAN ADAM.

Satan told a half truth when he told Eve that they would know good and evil if they disobeyed God and took of the forbidden fruit. Satan also told Eve a half truth when he said, “*For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as God, knowing good and evil.*” (Gen 3: 5) Satan wanted the woman to think that she would be like God, which was false, but as to good and evil she and Adam had a little knowledge of good and evil. As to surely dying, Satan lied to her, for in fact, after disobeying God, she immediately died spiritually and eventually after nine hundred and thirty years Adam died physically. (Gen 5: 5) This first sin caused the whole race of man to be totally depraved. Adam's sin nature passed unto all human beings, causing us all to fall short of the glory of God. (Rom 3: 23) So the results of Adam's sin has brought us all under the condemnation of sin. “*As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one; There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh*

after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no not one.” (Rom 3: 10-12) Sin has passed to every generation, giving us a sin nature, making it easy for us to live a life of sin apart from Almighty God.

By the grace of God, and through the Incarnation of the Eternal Son of God, we can be set free from the law of sin and of death. *“For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ, our Lord.” (Rom 6: 23)*

Before it became necessary for the Lord to prepare an escape route, God in His everlasting love, prepared a body of perfection and without sin to become sin for us that we might obtain the righteousness of God through faith in the Lord Jesus Christ. Sin has exposed itself openly and God was able to deal with it outwardly, condemning it in the flesh and redeeming precious souls through the shed blood of The Lamb of God who has taken away the sins of the world. *“Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver and gold, from your vain manner of life received by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot,” (1 Pet 1: 18-19)*

CONCLUSION

As we summarize the creation of mankind, we marvel with the psalmist of long ago: *“When I consider thy heavens, the work of thy fingers, the moon and the stars, which thou has ordained, What is man, that thou art mindful of him? And the son of man, that thou visitest him? For thou has made him a little lower than the angels, and hast crowned him with glory and honor. Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou has put all things under his feet.” (Ps 8: 3-6)* Through redemption, God has brought believers back into His Divine pattern for man. In the world to come, men who have been born again of God the Holy Spirit will be designated to be judges of both angels and issues of the world. *“For unto the angels hath He not put in subjection, the world to come, of which we speak.” (Heb 2: 5)* It is through mankind that the Triune God has condemned and judged sin and will cast it into eternity past to remain in the lake of fire forever and ever.

We as believers have been richly blessed by God, through His Eternal Son, the Lord Jesus Christ. As we search the Scriptures and learn more and more about our high calling in Christ Jesus, we will realize more and more that God has loved us with an everlasting love. The closer that one gets to the end of this present life, the more fervent one becomes in doing our very best for our Master, the Lord Jesus Christ. Student of the Bible, you have but one life to live upon this earth and what you do for yourself will soon end, but what you do for the Lord will live on into the future, forever and ever. God has given us a tremendous privilege to serve Him in appreciation for what He has done for us. We do not work for God to gain salvation, but rather, we work for God because He has already given us so great salvation. I thank God for the privilege that He has given to me, as I work in the harvest fields of God. There are precious souls for whom Christ died and God wants us to *“Go into all the world.” “Go ye, therefore, and teach all*

nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the age. Amen.” (Matt 28: 19-20)

In closing this chapter on Adam, may we not excuse ourselves because of Adam's failure to do God's perfect will, but rather let us take heed to the teachings of God's Word. I am sure that many of you have tried to excuse yourselves of your besetting sins, because of the failures of many of the Old Testament saints. Their sins do not give you a license for your sins! *“Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are. Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this age, let him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God. For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness. And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain. Therefore, let no man glory in men. For all things are yours, Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours. and ye are Christ's, and Christ is God's.” (1 Cor 3: 16-23)* *“Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you; but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.” (1 Cor 6: 9-11)*

I plead with each of you to use your remaining time upon this earth, to serve the Living God, regardless of your individual circumstances. We must not excuse ourselves in any way, comparing ourselves with the Old Testament saints. I say this because from the day of Pentecost until the rapture we are members of the body of Christ, with God the Holy Spirit dwelling within us forever. We as believers during this age of grace have the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit, being born again by the Holy Spirit. *“Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world.” (1 Jn 4: 4)*

We may think that God is unjust with the progeny or offspring of Adam, condemning them as totally depraved. However, we are wrong with such reasoning because the natural body is not only declared a sinful nature, but also continues in sinful activity. The Word of God declares, *“For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.” (Romans 3: 23)* Don't blame God for this sinful state, but rejoice that God has made a way of escape delivering us from total depravity unto “Total Perfection” in Christ Jesus. God provides and now you must decide! *“Behold, I was shaped in iniquity, and in sin did my mother conceive me.” (Psalm 51: 5)* That statement from the Bible does not mean that the conception in itself is sin, but rather that mankind is “Totally Depraved” in the old nature, and requires a new birth by God the Holy Spirit. God has commanded mankind, *“And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it:” (Gen 1: 28a)*

Q. WHAT DID OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS DO ABOUT THEIR SINS?

Q. WHY DON'T WE NEED TO SACRIFICE ANIMALS ANYMORE?

THE QUESTION OF SIN.

Sin has become the obstacle, and only God could remove the barrier of sin, by paying the total debt of sin through the Lord Jesus Christ. Before Jesus' sacrificial death on the cross, each individual had to, "By Faith," offer animal sacrifices to cover their sins until Christ came to remove their sins. Therefore, during their whole lifetime, old testament believers "Kept On" sacrificing "By Faith," always expecting God's "Supreme Sacrifice" to take away, forever, the guilt of their personal sins. Israel, as the chosen nation through which the Messiah would come, also presented a multitude of sacrifices to keep in fellowship with Almighty God, and preserve a lineage through which the Messiah would come. God had given Israel a particular sign through the King/Priest Melchizedek. The Bible says: *"If, therefore, perfection were by the Levitical priesthood (for under it the people received the law), what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchizedek, and not be called after the order of Aaron? For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law. For He of whom these things are spoken pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar. For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah, of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood. And it is yet far more evident; for after the similitude of Melchizedek there ariseth another priest, Who is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment but after the power of an endless life."* (Heb 7: 11-16) This portion of Scripture reveals the heavenly order, prepared before the foundation of the world, to deal with the sin question once and forever.

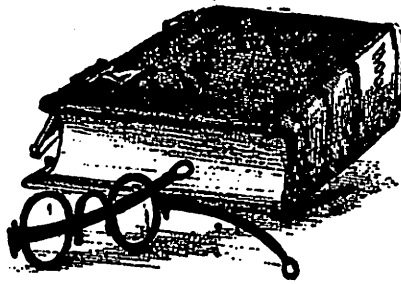
Q. HOW WILL GOD ERADICATE SIN?

God created man, not to remain innocent in a paradise garden, but rather to exercise his freedom of choice, with God providing the escape route from eternal sin, judging "Total Sin" at the cross. This provision of God made possible "The Total Judgement of Sin," through God's supreme sacrifice of His own Son. *"For He hath made Him, who knew no sin, to be sin for us, that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him."* (2 Corinthians 5: 21) We are all condemned under sin until we accept Christ's gift of eternal life. *"But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe."* (Galatians 3: 22) The coming of the Lord as both sacrifice and Sacrificer has an eternal purpose. *"For Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us; Not yet that He should offer Himself often, as the high priest entereth into the holy place every year with blood of others; For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world. But now once, in the end of the ages, hath He appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of Himself."* (Hebrews 9: 24-26)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FOUR

1. Write briefly on "The Importance in creating man." Use Scripture.
2. In what likeness of God was man brought into existence?
3. When was the human body of Christ created? Give Scripture.
4. Why is God allowing sin to run its course? Give Scripture.
5. Where did the first sin occur? Give Scripture.
6. What power does Satan and his demons have in possessing creatures of earth? Give examples from the Scripture.
7. What has been the results of Adam's first sin? Give Scripture.
8. In what way did mankind become like God?
9. Why did all generations from Adam become "Totally Depraved?" Give Scripture.
10. Why was it necessary for the Eternal Son of God to take a form of a man?
11. Does God have many methods in saving souls? Explain by quoting Scripture.
12. Explain (*Psalm 8: 3-6*) and (*Hebrew 2: 5*)
13. Write an essay on, "The Freedom of Choice."
14. Does God ever have to change His plans to cope with the changing situations in this world? Explain your answer with Scripture.
15. How are we as human beings different from angels and animals?
16. What change has come into believers to make them greater than angels? Give Scripture with your answer.
17. Explain (*1 Peter 1: 20*)
18. Write an essay on (*1 Corinthians 15: 20-23*)
19. Write an essay on (*1 Corinthians 15: 45-47*)
20. Write an essay on, "Why I should Serve The Lord."

CHAPTER FIVE



WHY WAS A UNIVERSAL FLOOD NECESSARY?

This is a very important question and with it, we also ask, "Why did God have Israel plunder all of those cities and take possession of their developed land?" The two questions are slightly different but are similar in God's reasons for their destruction. The common reason, which we will explain in detail, is: Their destruction was necessary for controlling the evil forces dominating their lives and their idol worship. If you understand God's reason for a world wide flood, killing all but eight souls, then you will also understand the mass killing of many pagan cities which were controlled by Satan.

The natural man tries to discount the authenticity of the flood, just as they do with Jonah and the large fish. They also attempt to discredit the fact of the virgin birth as a Hebrew myth. Let's see what the Bible has to say about the universal flood that completely covered the whole earth.

A. WHAT WAS HAPPENING TO THE HUMAN RACE BEFORE THE FLOOD?

With the onslaught of Satan and his billions of demons, it looked like they would take possession of this earth. However, they had to give an account to God as we are reminded in the Book of Job. Being a great multitude of demons, they could control many places at the same time. Each demon including Satan can only be at one place at a time, for which we can be thankful. We must remember that Satan was aware of his sentence from God in the garden of Eden. He was determined to destroy the seed of the woman before it destroyed him. However, he was ignorant of this one thing. He mistook the seed of child bearing of male and female as the "seed of the woman". The killing of Abel didn't work, and God gave another son, Seth, to Eve. (*Gen 4: 25-26*) It was then that men began to call upon the name of the Lord, and there was a great increase in population from that time on.

"This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him. Male and female created He them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created. And Adam lived an hundred and thirty years, and begot a son in his own likeness, after his image; and he called his name Seth. And the days of Adam after he had begotten Seth were eight hundred years: and he begot sons and daughters. And all the days that Adam lived were nine hundred and thirty years: and he died." (*Gen 5: 1-5*) This in short, represents the multiplicity of generations which gave a good start in populating the whole world. We must remember that Satan had great power as the prince of the power of the air. He also could brainwash every soul coming into this world. (*2 Cor 4: 4*) We do not have the multiplying of the human race in detail at this moment in history, but we do know that many cities began to be built. The marriage within the family of Adam was necessary, and the generations that followed were mighty and not weak. God provided a healthy race of people to possess this earth.

The question arises, What was happening to the human race that a flood would be necessary to destroy them? God has the answer found in the Bible, so let us turn to God's Word for the answer. Something was happening to the human race which would be detrimental to God's plan for the "Messianic Promise." Here is what was happening, *"And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they*

were fair; and they took them wives of all whom they chose. And the Lord said, *My Spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years. There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they and they bore children to them, the same became mighty men who were of old, men of renown.*" (Gen 6: 1-4) This needs a clear understanding according to God's Word. May I list and explain a few Biblical principles about the subject.

1. The sons of God refer to angels, which differentiates from mankind. In this particular case they were fallen angels because of God's displeasure. (Gen 6: 3)
2. All angels are sexless and cannot reproduce, as we will be when we get our glorified bodies. "*For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are like the angels of God in heaven.*" (Matt 22: 30) (Mk 12: 24-25; Lk 20: 34-36)
3. Therefore, the only way that there could be an unusual and unnatural race of human beings would be the infiltration of angels through both human males and human females.
4. Whatever caused these giants to come into existence, had to be through males and females of the human race. When demons or fallen angels, possess human beings, they give great, superhuman physical power to the people they indwell. Many of us have witness to these unusual powers in demon possession.
5. Why did God have to send a world wide flood? The billions of fallen angels were trying to possess of every living person, and destroy the possibility of a pure strain of humanity through which God the Son could enter this world as the Incarnate One.
6. God found a family through which He could pour out His Grace, "*But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord.*" (Gen 6: 8)

There are some fallen angels who became demons, they "*kept not their first estate.*" (Jude 6-7) These could have been responsible for the indwelling of human beings. We know that, to this very day, there are people who are "Demon Possessed" There is another group of fallen angels, "*For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgement; And spared not the old world, but saved Noah, the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them with an overflow, making them an example unto those that after should live ungodly.*" (2 Pet 2: 4-5) This may be just another case of the unruly fallen angels, or they could be directly connected with the cause of the flood. Whatever the case, we know that these sons of God were infiltrating into the realm of mankind. We also must remember that Satan has stolen the realm of the earth from God and has become the god of this world. Had Satan and his billions of demons continued to infiltrate all of mankind, it would have been impossible for God to have had a Messianic lineage. I believe that it was also a struggle between the lineage of Seth and the ungodly lineage from Cain. The lineage of Cain was causing the ungodly leaven to penetrate into the total population in the world.

We must always remember that the imputation of sin through Adam, makes all mankind "Total Depraved" by birth. That means the total population in the world. There are always certain characteristics that a new born baby has, which are inherited from the baby's parents. Regardless of these inherited traits, that baby as it becomes accountable will be of two opinions. Either Satan and his demons will be there to brainwash that individual, "*lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto him,*" (2 Cor 4: 4b) or the gospel of Jesus Christ will make a change in his life, when that soul allows the new birth by God the Holy Spirit, making him into a new creature. Jesus Christ, the third person of the Trinity would enter our world to provide the payment for the sins of every human that ever lived or ever will live. He was the promised Messiah and the "Seed of the Woman" spoken of in Genesis. That is why in the Master plan of the Triune God that a messianic lineage was necessary. Let us search the Scripture and identify this promise that God was protecting.

B. WHAT PROMISE WAS GOD PROTECTING WHEN HE SENT THE FLOOD?

I am sure that both Enoch and Noah had family members who went the way of Cain in disobedience. These all perished when the waters completely covered the whole world. The souls of small children who died in the flood, who had not reached the age of accountability went to Sheol. These were among those whom Christ delivered out from Sheol and brought into the heavenly Paradise when He died on the cross.

The account of Enoch going to heaven, without dying, is a specific case which is exemplary to the coming Rapture of the saints of all ages. *"And Enoch walked with God, and he was not; for God took him."* (Gen 5: 24) Enoch was "Caught Up" before that terrible flood, after serving God for most of his 365 years upon this earth. God had to bring a halt to the massive "Demon Possession," or the whole world could have come under the power of Satan. Praise God, we who are the saints of God, will also be *"Caught up out from the wrath to come,"* like Enoch was. (1 Thess 1: 10)

The flood was terrible, but Christ Himself tells us of the coming great tribulation that will be more terrible than anything of the past, present or future. *"For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved; but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened."* (Matt 24: 21-22)

God preserved eight souls from the flood, and chose Shem to be the lineage of the Messiah. This was the important feature in stopping the total demon possession among all mankind. God's plans did not change by bringing the flood, for He knew exactly every thought and intent of Satan and his army of demons. As we study other Scriptures concerning the preservation of the Messianic Promise, we understand the continual attack that the evil forces have against the Messiah, who arrived safely, according to God's plan. We can better understand the reason for the flood, as we understand the promise of the Messiah. The lineage was kept, the Messiah came for redemption of precious souls, and the Messiah will return to take us out from the coming great tribulation. Those seven years that we will spend in heaven during the Great Tribulation will be an outstanding Bible study course, preparing us for the thousand year kingdom of righteousness. May each of us as students of the Bible, be mindful of God's promises. Whether those promises refer to the blessings and assurance for the ages to come, or for our daily prayer requests, we can rest assured that God will honor His Word.

May I remind you that when you think that there are discrepancies in the original Word of God, you better look again! What I desire to teach in this volume, is to follow the pattern of dealing with various questions, in the light of God's purpose, according to a particular time period. One of the outstanding examples of this is in the life of the Lord Jesus Christ, during His earthly ministry. The Lord was dealing directly with Israel according to the Old Testament promises. They were to receive a Messiah through the tribe of Judah. God in His omniscience knew that many of the Jews would reject the Messiah, so He sent a substitute for Elijah and also prepared for the mystery age of the church. The disciples first went only among the children of Israel, and later on were sent among all nations. There is nothing wrong with this procedure, for God's complete plan takes into consideration the time element, and to whom He is referring..

As we examine these various difficult problems in the Word of God, may we do so, following the rules and regulations which I have already mentioned. Yes, there are some secrets of God which have not been explained at this present time, but this should not discourage us as we seek to thoroughly understand the overall plan of God. God the Holy Spirit, who dwells within every Christian is there to help. He expects you to diligently and faithfully study the Word, being guided by God the Holy Spirit, then He will be your ever present help. Do not depend upon the human viewpoint in your study of the Bible, but rather depend upon the Divine viewpoint, being led by the Holy Spirit.

C. WHAT HAPPENED TO ALL OF THE DINOSAURS?

This is a question which the evolutionists cannot answer, except as they try to explain them away by having them diminish in size and evolve into some other creature. They often call it "Adaptation," which involves circumstances that developed over millions of years. Their answer to the disappearing of the dinosaurs is not acceptable. Dinosaurs have been found, in the flesh, frozen, as far north as the regions of

the north pole. From this we can draw a conclusion that they were buried alive and frozen to death, when the earth was thrown off of its axis. We turn to the Bible and discover that God caused a world wide flood to cover the whole earth, saving 8 souls and many pairs of animals in Noah's ark. *"And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord."* (Gen 6: 7-8) What we discover in this short passage is that the earth was totally covered with water, making it impossible for even the birds of the air to survive.

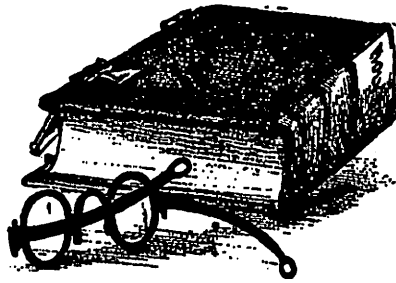
This does not mean that the present mountains were the same height as now, but rather that many mountains sank into the depths of the sea. The waters rose as well as the rain coming down, with many of the mountains sinking into the deep. At the time of the flood, the earth was thrown off of its axis and causing seasons, with both the north and the south pole freezing. It was as simple as that and we go by what the Bible says. *"And, behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and everything that is in the earth shall die."* Gen 6: 17 This included the dinosaurs, which could not enter Noah's ark.

God in His marvelous grace has given us a sign in the sky that there never would be another flood. Periodically we look up into the sky and there we have a glimpse of the rainbow. *"And I will establish my covenant with you; neither shall all flesh be cut off any more by waters of a flood; neither shall there any more be a flood to destroy the earth. And God said, This is the token of the covenant which I make between me and you and every living creature that is with you, for perpetual generations: I do set my bow in the cloud, and it shall be for a token of a covenant between me and the earth. And it shall come to pass, when I bring a cloud over the earth, that the bow shall be seen in the cloud; And I will remember my covenant, which is between me and you and every living creature of all flesh; and the waters shall no more become a flood to destroy all flesh. And the bow shall be in the cloud; and I will look upon it, that I may remember the everlasting covenant between God and every living creature of all flesh that is upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, This is the token of the covenant, which I have established between me and all flesh that is upon the earth."* Gen 9: 11-17 When we behold that rainbow in the sky, we have another evidence of God's promises to mankind. This is a beautiful analogy based upon the promises of God. God delivered faithful Enoch out from the flood to come, taking him on to heaven, similarly the Lord will come and deliver us out from the wrath to come during that great tribulation. (1 Thess 1: 10) God always keeps His promises and has given us a guarantee of this by the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. *"And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you forever: Even the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you."* (John 14: 16-17) What a joy and privilege it is to have the promises of God. That is why we can say with confidence, *"Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world."* (1 John 4: 4)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FIVE.

1. Give Scriptural proof that the flood covered the whole world.
2. What was Satan attempting to do with all of the human beings? Scripture please.
3. What happened when God gave Eve another son called Seth? Scripture please.
4. Write briefly on (*Genesis 5: 1-5*)
5. Explain (*Genesis 6: 1-4*)
6. Who are these sons of God mentioned before the flood?
7. Can angels marry and have other angels? Give Scripture.
8. What was happening among human beings before the flood? Give Scripture.
9. Explain (*Jude 6-7*)
10. Why was the flood necessary? Give Scripture.
11. What promise was God protecting by bringing the flood?
12. Who of Noah's three sons was chosen as the Messianic lineage?
13. Why aren't the dinosaurs living today? Explain thoroughly.
14. What happened to the earth that we now have seasons?
15. What sign did God give that there would never be another flood? Scripture please.
16. Write an essay on, "Enoch and His analogy with the Rapture."
17. List as many promises from the Bible as you can recall.

CHAPTER SIX



WHY DO WE HAVE SO MANY LANGUAGES?

Today with so many languages and dialects, we could only wish that we all spoke one language, but that is not the case. In the beginning, Adam and Eve were created, in the likeness of Almighty God. Before the foundation of the world, the Bible says, a body was prepared for the second Person of the Trinity, Jesus Christ. Adam and Eve were given a language, whereby they could commune with God. Although the Bible does not directly mention this, we have evidence from the Bible to that effect. God would personally come and walk with them in the cool of the Evening. They had to be able to speak to God, and He with them. (*Gen 3: 8-13*) Not only were they given a language, but they were taught to write. The Bible has the answer to this fact. There was a man from the seventh generation from Adam who knew how to write. His name was Enoch, "*And Enoch walked with God and he was not, for God took him.*" (*Gen 5: 24*) They were not deaf to each other that they had to use a sign language, but were able to talk together with great understanding. Now we must also refer to another Scripture. "*And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His saints, To execute judgement upon all, and to convict all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him*" (*Jude 14,15*) As God walked with Enoch, He shared with him prophetic truths of future ages. This must have been in writing, otherwise the Holy Spirit would not have had occasion for Jude to quote it. We therefore know that the original language which all mankind spoke came from God. Now we will search the Scriptures for the reason we have so many languages, and find out where they originated.

Q. WHAT WAS MANKIND TRYING TO DO AT THE TOWER OF BABEL?

A. THE ASPIRATION OF MANKIND.

It is confirmed in the Bible that all the seed of Adam were of one language and had great aspirations for themselves, apart from God. "*And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech.*" (*Gen 11: 1*) There were no dialects in the first language on this earth. They all spoke the same language, which may be what will happen during the Millennium. The reason I say this is the fact that there will be a one world kingdom of righteousness ruled from Jerusalem by the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ. The whole earth will be under God's control and sovereignty, but mankind will still have the freedom of choice and those living at the end of the thousand year reign will have to choose between the righteousness of God and the deception of Satan. So, as in the days of the building of the tower of Babel, many, as the sand of the sea shall follow Stan to their final destruction, as they did during the building of the tower of Babel. "*And they said, Come, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth.*" (*Gen 11: 4*) If this had been allowed by God, Satan would have had an easier wicked task of keeping all of mankind under his control, since he can only be at one place at one time. It is true that he has billions of fallen angels under his control, which he has always utilized in his rebellion against God. Satan was inspiring mankind to make a name for themselves, apart from God, which would simplify his control over them. "*And the Lord*

said, Behold, the people are one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be withheld (Restrained) from them, which they have imagined to do.” (Gen 11: 6) Perhaps this is the first sign of an ecumenical ambition of those who wish to make a name for themselves, rather than glorify the Lord. In the present form of ecumenicism we are aware of their aspirations, and we perhaps can identify it with what could have happened, if God had not intervened. In spite of a great many languages in this world, we can see how Satan is trying to get all nations under one world satanic religion, practicing parts of all religions but denying the central theme of the Bible which presents God’s gift of eternal life to everyone who believes in, and accepts His Son, Jesus Christ.

Q. WHERE WAS THE FIRST ONE-WORLD-RELIGION STARTED?

A. ONE-WORLD-RELIGION

The trend of the day with the ecumenicist is to make a one world religion that will be suitable for all. Unite together regardless of beliefs, just to make one great name for all. Their present aim is to establish a one world order, accepting anything and everything regardless! There would be many types of Bibles, with rules and regulations differing. Christ would be one way of many ways. Idol worship would be acceptable, as one form of worshipping whatever. The one world church is well on it's way to great power and will be used by the coming dictator and false prophet who will be deceived by Satan. We know from the revelation given to Daniel that the beast will make a 7 year covenant with Israel which will probably follow the beasts take over of other religions in the world. *“And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week (7 years); and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.” (Dan 9: 27)* Religion is usually described in the Bible by the means of a woman. God has used women in a wonderful way throughout the Bible, but Satan has also chosen women as well as men for his deceptive projects. John on the Isle of Patmos, saw what the future holds concerning Satan's use of a woman. *“So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet-colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and bedecked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication; And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her, I wondered with great wonder.” (Rev 17: 3-6)* This prophesy is yet to be fulfilled during the latter part of the tribulation. The beast and the woman are well identified in (Revelation 17: 7-18) Please note, *“And the woman whom thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.” (Revelation 17: 18)* That statement is a very strong declaration and history reveals the religious powers in control of governments down through the years. The unification of all religions will take place and be used to bring the coming Dictator into power and then be destroyed as revealed in God's Word. (Rev 18: 1-24)

The aspiration of mankind has always been to make a name for himself as totally independent of God, whom the natural man refuses to accept. In the name of religion, evil men have gained control of governments. This will be the order of the day, until the Lord Himself sets up a unified one world government of righteousness, by the use of *“A Rod of Iron.” (Rev 19: 15)* If God had allowed the progeny of Shem to intermingle freely with all of mankind, then the Messianic hope would have been lost forever. God in His Omniscience prepared for such an onslaught by Satan and spoiled Satan's plan by the destruction of the Tower of Babel. We must remember as we review the past Babylon, that it was but a forerunner of “Mystery Babylon” of the future.

Q. WAS SATAN BEHIND THE BUILDING OF THE TOWER OF BABEL?

B. THE TOWER OF BABEL.

Let us turn to the Bible for that great blow to Satan that God performed at the Tower of Babel. *“And the Lord said, Behold, the people are one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be withheld from them, which they have imagined to do. Come, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. So the Lord scattered*

them abroad from there upon the face of all the earth: and from there did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.” (Gen 11: 6-9) God had punished all mankind by sending a world wide flood and with eight souls the earth was again populated, preserving the lineage of Shem through which God would provide the Messiah. As we had seen, through the Scriptures that this was a great punishment upon mankind, as they were almost entirely under the influence of Satan and his billions of demons. Now a new problem had arisen, with worldly man wanting to make a great name for himself, apart from God. We want to consider what all was involved with such a united decision of mankind after the flood.

Q. WHAT IS RELIGION ALL ABOUT?

THE PRACTICE OF RELIGION.

It is always very interesting to listen to people of various religions talk about their religion and justify themselves, trying to convince you that their particular religion is the right one. Let us trace the oldest religion that we have record of, using ancient history and the Bible. Of course, the Bible will be our most accurate account. It is the most dependable source one can turn to, since the Bible is the Eternal Word of God. (2 Timothy 3: 16-17) Perhaps, before we get too involved in dealing with religion, may we make sure as to what is meant by the term “Religion” and what limitations are involved in “Religion.” It is definitely a “Form of Worship” but it will vary according to customs, nationalism, holiness, and often practiced out of fear or superstition. Mankind naturally desires to worship something, whether it be the creature or the Creator. One who believes in the existence of God, attempts to find ways and means of worshipping God. An atheist attempts to worship materialism in a very religious sense of the word. In Acts 17:15-28, Paul found some very religious people in Athens, Greece, and remarked, “*Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too superstitious,*” Paul found them worshipping many gods and even erected a shrine to an “Unknown God.” In their superstition they worshipped many gods and truly could be called a very religious people. Religion is not necessarily a worship toward Almighty God but rather “religion is man's relationship with man in certain practices of devotion.” It is a simple and easy task to get a group of people stirred up into a frenzy of emotion through various methods of hypnotic rhythm and dedication. Man was never created to be a mere religious puppet or robot, but rather to be a companion with God, his Creator. God could have created mankind without a choice and merely given him an instinct as in the animal world. However, God's purpose through man is to establish a creature upon whom He made in His likeness, who would, of his own free choice, desire to worship with his Creator as a member of the royal family of God. The grace and omniscience of God would also provide a way of access into His very presence. In the case of Adam and Eve, after their fall into sin, God sought them and provided both sacrifice and clothing for them. “*For Adam also and for his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them.*” (Gen 3: 21)

Since the fall of God's present creation started in heaven, through the fallen angels, led by Lucifer the prince of the power of the air, who became Satan and the devil, the scope of conflict of the ages is tremendous. This one act of Lucifer has influenced both the spiritual and physical being of mankind, thus affecting man's relation with God. Man became the victim and special target of Satan. This evil one has been using mankind as his weapon in his battle against God. God has made His declaration, “*I will put enmity between thee*” (Satan) “*and the woman, and between thy seed*” (unregenerate man) “*and her seed*” (the virgin birth of Christ); “*He*” (Christ the seed of the woman) “*shall bruise thy head, and thou*” (Satan) “*shall bruise his heel.*” (Gen 3: 15) This is the original declaration of war between Satan and God. So, by every means possible, Satan is deceiving mankind, using counterfeits to confuse man. Satan has his false religions, to draw the multitudes away from God, “*But if our gospel be hidden it is hidden to them that are lost, in whom the god of this age hath blinded the minds of them who believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.*” (2 Cor 4: 4-5) God has broken this claim that Satan has on mankind, through the sacrificial death of The Eternal Son of God on the cross of Calvary. Sin is running its course as Satan has been declared the god of this world system. It is amazing that Satan even offered the kingdoms of this world system to Christ, if He would just bow down and worship him. (Matt 4: 8-9) It is also obvious that Satan controls the religions of this world with their endless varieties of false beliefs throughout the world. It is Satan's aim to synchronize both the religions of the world and the governments of the world to maintain complete control in his battle against God.

In God's plan for the human race, it was imperative that He have a chosen race of people to work through and to maintain their "Status Quo." *"But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons."* (Gal 4: 4-5) Christ became that seed of the woman. In this chosen race of people there needed to be both a priestly order as well as a kingly order and both needed to be kept separate until the fullness of time. The Tribe of Judah was the kingly lineage and the Tribe of Levi the priestly order. However the Messiah was to be of both King and Priest, but still of the Tribe of Judah. So, God in His omniscience created a new order, after Melchizedek. Note (*Psalm 110: 4*); (*Hebrews 5: 6-7*); (*Hebrews 7: 1-22*) Satan is aware of all of this, as he also studies the Bible, and is continually attempting to integrate both religion and government in direct opposition to God. God in His great all inclusive wisdom states, *"Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's."* (Matt 22: 21)

The enmity between Satan and the seed of the woman began immediately with the first son born to Eve by the name of Cain. He ignored God's way, and offered a lovely but bloodless sacrifice to God. His rage, after God rejected his sacrifice, ended in the tragic murder of his brother Abel. Satan succeeded in corrupting Cain, which culminated in the murder of obedient Abel. Since that failed, Eve had other godly sons and daughters, Satan began to indwell all of mankind, causing God's judgement upon all but eight souls, through the flood. After the flood, Satan then turned his attention upon Noah who was immediately attacked and degraded and through his son Ham, apostasy began. Yes, Noah sinned, *"And he drank of the wine, and became drunk; and he was uncovered within his tent."* (Gen 9: 21) Evidently Ham made fun of the nakedness of his father as he spoke to his brothers. *"And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren outside."* (Gen 9: 22) These sons of Ham became very wicked and one of his sons named Cush had a son who became legendary in power and might. *"And Cush begot Nimrod; he began to be a mighty one in the earth."* (Gen 10: 8) Nimrod was chosen by Satan to degrade mankind through a satanic religion which would centralize it's power upon the earth rather than depend upon "The God of Heaven."

As we read the Bible and study ancient history, especially concerning the Phoenicians, we discover that the first religious system came through the wife of Nimrod whose name was Semaramis. Nimrod began to be a mighty one in all the earth. (Gen 10: 8) The kingdom of Babel was named the new "Gate of God," (Gen 10: 10) with the first place of worship, "The Tower of Babel," where man first desired to make a name for himself, rather than glorify the Name of God. The name Babel is of the utmost importance to us, if we are to understand the conflict of the ages and the final judgement upon "Mystery Babylon" as recorded in Revelation chapters 17 and 18. There are a few concepts that we need to consider.

1. Babel is identical to the great city of Babylon.
2. The "Queen of Heaven" religion had it's beginning in Babel.
3. The "Mother / Child" religion had it's origin in Babel.
4. The final judgement of the religion which is known as "Mystery Babylon" is prophesied in *Revelation chapter 17 & chapter 18*.

Q. WHO STARTED THE MOTHER / CHILD RELIGION?

NIMROD THE MIGHTY MAN.

Nimrod, the mighty man became powerful and moved out from under the rule of God and listened to the voice of Satan. Satan, who is the father of lies, promised: *"Ye shall be as gods,"* (Gen 3: 5) Nimrod's "Tower of Babel," which was meant to be "The Gate of God" became "The Place of Confusion." This effort to build the tower of Babel became the first organized religion established in the year 2247 B.C. The religions of the world may have the appearance of moving toward God but on the contrary they cause mankind to move away from God into the clutches of satanic power. The religion of Nimrod started through his wife "Semaramis" who had a son whom they called "Tammuz". Semaramis claimed that she

was the woman of promise spoken of in (*Genesis 3:15*) and that her son Tammuz was "The seed of the Woman" that would bruise the head of Satan. This of course sounded very religious and so, Semaramis set herself up as a "goddess" and also as "The high priestess" of the Babylonian religion. She became the false "mediatrix" or "redemptrix" between man and their man-made god or goddess, and established a "Mother / Child" religion. One can easily see how Satan deliberately set up this counterfeit in deception. Nimrod was a mighty one in his kingdom and in the whole world, and his wife Semaramis was the mighty goddess, giving herself the name, "The Queen of Heaven." She set herself up as the rightful medium for the redemption of mankind. This was Satan's attempt to establish a religion with symbols of counterfeit in contrast to God's great plan of salvation. By this, Satan was gaining a great multitude of worshippers under his deceptive religion.

Tammuz, according to Babylonian legend was a hunter like his father Nimrod and as he was hunting wild boar, he was killed. This was no doubt a great shock to his mother, the self made goddess, who set herself up as "The Queen of Heaven." However, Semaramis called the religious virgins together for 40 days of prayer and fasting for Tammuz. After which it was then proclaimed throughout the great empire of Nimrod that Tammuz had risen from the dead. This called for a great feast for all to celebrate. The symbol of the feast in honor of Tammuz was "eggs," bringing new life. This became the annual "festal egg day" throughout Babylon. The birthday of Tammuz must also be celebrated and this had the symbol of an "Evergreen Tree," thus the "Mother / Child" religion became secure and Semaramis was heralded as the "Mediatrix," "The Queen of Heaven" It is amazing how these symbols have been brought into our celebrations as Christians. These symbols often detract from the truth about Christmas and Easter.

Babylon became great both politically and religiously and as a mighty power, spread throughout the world, and of course this religious deception did also in all of Phoenicia. The "Mother Child Religion" was eventually known as "Ashtaroth / Tammuz," and finally Ashtaroth was changed in some areas to "Ishtar," from which we get the word "Easter." In Egypt these names became known as "Isis" or "Horus." Our word "Horoscope" comes from Horus. In Greece this religion was known as "Aphrodite / Eros." In Rome this religion was known as "Venus / Cupid." The 40 day fasting of the virgins became "Lent," culminating with Easter with the egg symbol and the birthday became Christmas with the tree as it's symbol. Satanic power was well established under the cloak of religion throughout the whole world. From Nimrod in Babel it spread to all of Babylon, Assyria, Egypt, Medo-Persia, Greece, and finally to Rome. Perhaps we could say that today Rome is the religious center of the world. It has tremendous influence in many nations, even to the extent of special rights. With the World Counsel of Churches, and all other religions around the world, the thrust is toward a united religion and developing into a "One World Religion."

Q. IS ANYTHING WRONG WITH A ONE-WORLD-RELIGION?

ONE WORLD RELIGION.

There are several large religious systems which we need to reckon with. Today, there is an aggressive movement to "Integrate Religion," and the vast liberal religious world is attempting to unite anything and everything into a one world religion, at all costs. The church/State of the old Roman Empire is still in great control and is very wealthy. Religions of the world, World Counsel of Churches, Moslem, Hinduism, Buddhism, the most recent one called "The goddess Sophia" and many others, are at present looking to Rome for that "New religious World Order." It stands to reason with a Mother / Child symbol and a woman placed as "The Queen of Heaven," backed by the wealth of these many national religions, with the prophetic declaration of "The revival of the Roman Empire," that this religion will culminate under the mighty beast. He will be brought into power by this "Mother Child" symbol and use it to ride into world wide power. This is predicted in the Bible. *"So he carried me away in the Spirit into the wilderness and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet colored beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns. And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet color, and bedecked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication; And upon her forehead was a name written, 'MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.' And I saw the woman drunk with the blood of the saints, and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus; and when I saw her, I wondered with great wonder."* (Rev 17: 3-6)

This all tallies up to the workings of Satan from the very beginning when religion entered this world at the Tower of Babel. In order to understand the full impact of this religious order set up by Satan, it requires a tremendous amount of study both of "Ancient History" and especially "Biblical History" in direct study of the Bible. In the Word of God we have but brief statements concerning heathen religions, as it conflicts with God's chosen people and His revelation. The infiltration of man's religion in contrast to man's relation to God occurs on numerous occasions.

While in Egypt, during the 400 years that God's people were confronted with the worship of strange gods, they were accustomed to many gods. Therefore in the wilderness of Mt. Sinai, when Moses was absent, it was easy for the Jewish people, to demand of Aaron, the high priest, that he make a golden calf to worship. We marvel how quickly Israel forgot their mighty deliverance from Egypt. They were too willing to worship anything but the true and living God. It reminds us of the mighty deception of Satan accepted today in all nations.

Israel entered the Promised Land, after 40 years of wondering through the wilderness. She again was exposed to many strange gods, which amounted to satanic religion. God had ordered Israel, as she entered her land, to utterly destroy the wicked people, as well as their gods, making no covenant with those godless nations. *"And I will set thy bounds from the Red Sea even unto the sea of the Philistines (Mediterranean), and from the desert unto the river (Euphrates); for I will deliver the inhabitants of the land into your hand, and thou shalt drive them out before thee. Thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor with their gods." (Exodus 23: 31-32)* The groves of trees where the heathen worshipped were to be cut down, *"But thus shall ye deal with them: ye shall destroy their altars, and break down their images, and cut down their idols, and burn their carved images with fire." (Deuteronomy 7: 5)*

The worshippers of Tammuz used the groves of trees as their temple, which reminds us that their form of worship centered around the creature, rather than the Creator. *"Who exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever. Amen." (Romans 1: 25)* Since Israel allowed these gods to remain, the Mother / Child religion corrupted her and finally brought on the "Babylonian Captivity," taking Judah back to the satanic source of religion.

The wicked king Ahab who married Jezebel brought this "Mother / Child" religion into Israel, planting groves of trees for her and her prophets and priests. *(1 Kings 16: 31-33)* The true prophets of God warned Israel of these wicked religious associations, and often challenged these heathen priests. Elijah was God's champion, challenging the priests of baal on Mt. Carmel. *(1 Kings 18)* Elijah had the people destroy the priests and the groves, which angered Jezebel exceedingly. Jezebel would have killed Elijah, but God intervened and protected Elijah. The prophet Jeremiah also warned the people and told them to put away their abominations, but they answered him, *"We will not harken unto thee. But we certainly do whatsoever thing goeth forth out of our own mouth, to burn incense unto THE QUEEN OF HEAVEN and to pour out drink offerings unto her." (Jer 44: 16-19); (Judges 2: 13); (1 Sam 7: 3)* God also sent Ezekiel to warn his people of this great abomination which was taking place within the "Holy of Hollies" of the temple. The people of Israel were worshipping every form of creeping thing, abominable beasts and all sorts of idols. Then God directed Ezekiel to behold greater abominations which were at the gates of the Lord's house and there he saw women sitting and "WEEPING FOR TAMMUZ." The Word of God speaks of such idolatry as the "IMAGE OF IMAGINATION." These women were observing LENT prior to the feast of ISHTAR. Satan is very subtle as to how he combines his deceitful form of worship with Biblical truths. *"Then said He unto me, son of man, lift up thine eyes now in the way toward the north. So I lifted up mine eyes in the way toward the north, and, behold, northward at the gate of the altar this IMAGE OF JEALOUSY in the entrance." (Ezek 8: 5)* This refers to Israel setting the MOTHER / CHILD image along side of the altar and the women were giving their worship to THE QUEEN OF HEAVEN. The children of Israel were combining the HOLY DAYS OF GOD and the holy days of Babylon, making it an abomination to God. God punished the tribes of Israel by sending 10 tribes to become slaves of Syria and the tribes of Judah and Benjamin were sent to Babylon. The seat of religious power, founded in Babylon, in due time was transferred to Rome under the great empire, led by Emperor Constantine.

Q. WHERE DID RELIGIOUS POWER GO WHEN BABYLON FELL?

THE TRANSFER OF RELIGIOUS POWER.

After the destruction of Babylon, Satan's seat of religion moved to Asia Minor, (*Rev 2: 13*) and from there it moved on to Rome where the rulers used this religion as a cloak to control the people. The Caesars of Rome became both emperors and high priests, establishing a Church / State control similar to the Mother / Child religion of Babylon. The Phoenician goddess called "the queen of heaven" combined both those that worshipped baal and ashtaroth, and this then moved on to Rome. This is quite significant since the final judgement of this first religion will be meted out against "Mystery Babylon," as she appears in Rome as the "Mother of Harlots." (*Rev 17: 18*) Under Emperor Constantine who was supposed to have seen a vision of the Cross, claimed Christianity as the State religion. This was a blow to the pagan religions and subtly the pagan priests of the "Mother / Child" religion of Babylon integrated into the Christian system of the State. This unholy alliance soon absorbed the "Pauline Christianity" and the paganism of Rome soon controlled the religious thought of the people. This also was the means by which Satan's seat of religion was transferred from Babylon to Rome. This historic event is very significant and culminated under the theologian Augustine who declared Rome as "The City of God," ignoring the Bible teaching that Christ Himself would come and reign upon the earth as "the King of kings and Lord of lords." When this happens, it will not be Rome, but rather Jerusalem that will be the capital of the world, and God's Holy City.

Satan has maintained a seat of religion from the Tower of Babel, Babylon, Pergamus, and finally Rome, where God's judgement will fall upon religion. Religion, portrayed in Revelations as the seven headed beast with ten horns, and as the "Scarlet Woman, arrayed in purple and scarlet," riding the beast into power, shall be utterly destroyed during the latter part of the tribulation. Religion is playing a very important part in the formation of a "One World Society," capable of controlling every phase of life in this world. This will take place after the true Church of Christ is raptured out of this world..

(*1 Thess 4: 13-18*) Under a combination of socialism and a false "Welfare Gospel," this world of ours is on an adaptation program, accepting every form of religion known, ignoring none. Regardless of evangelical revivals, the evil forces are exploiting the freedom of religious choice of individuals in this world. So beware! Test religion with the Word of God and remember that Satan often uses parts of the Word of God to deceive us.

Q. WHEN DOES A RELIGION BECOME PAGAN?

THE REVIVAL OF PAGANISM.

True Christianity has been so "Watered Down" that Satan has been successful in his campaign to brainwash unbelievers throughout the world. He uses various kinds of gimmicks to accomplish his deceit. Would anyone ever have believed that the religion of the Ephesians "Diana (Artemis)" would revive? Well it has, just recently in Minneapolis, Minnesota. There were some 2,000 militant and radical feminists in that city gathered from liberal churches under the various counsels of churches who declared their version of a "Christian - Feminist Perspective." These have rejected the Bible as God's authoritative Word, and reject the masculine figure in the form of Jesus Christ and they created a feminine goddess which they named "Sophia." This goddess is referred to as "Creator God." These feminists have turned away from the authority of the Bible and have reverted back to paganism of the 15th. Century B.C. Great sums of money were taken from the ecumenical funds for this "Ecumenical Decade: Churches in solidarity with Women" (1988-1998) I do not wish to take your study time in repeating their main speakers who rejected the Bible as God's Word, and set up "The god our Mother" theme, attempting to destroy our heritage through the patriarch lineage. A modern "Jezebel" is their order for the day. In fact these ungodly people are going far beyond in their wickedness. They have completely denied the blood of the atonement through our Lord Jesus Christ. However, whatever they say, we know: "*And almost all things are by the law purged with blood, and without the shedding of blood is no remission.*" (*Hebrews 9: 22*) May the Lord constantly remind us of this all important fact, "*The Precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ was shed in paying the debt of our sins.*"

Q. WHY NOT TAKE THE BEST OF ALL RELIGIONS?

INTEGRATED RELIGION.

This blindness and brainwashing by Satan is growing very rapidly. These false prophets, of many religions, are satisfied with their self made religions, and glory in their blindness. This all is leading to a "One World Religion" integrated to the extent that the natural man is attempting to by pass God's commandments and "make a name for himself." This "Integrated Religion" in the making is attempting to take the best out of all religions as a means of acquiring peace on earth. It is very attractive to the unregenerate man of today and seems very plausible as a way out of this terrible unrest in this world of ours. Ecumenicism is growing very popular and the so called "Prodigal religions" are uniting rapidly and will be strongly established when the Dictator of the Revived Roman Empire needs his final support in becoming the Emperor of the world during the great tribulation. The wealth of the world is rapidly falling into the hands of this "Political / Religious" system and the Beast of the Revived Roman Empire will gladly make a seven year covenant with Israel through their false prophet. The Beast will allow "The Mother of Harlots" to lead him into power. This integrated religion will continue to drink the cup of abominations, becoming drunk with the blood of the saints and martyrs of the Lord Jesus Christ. (Rev 17: 1-6) This Integrated Religion will be cast into the great tribulation, being "The Apostate Church." Praise God, the Rapture of the True Church and all of the Old Testament saints will precede this, being "Caught Up" to meet the Lord in the air. Christ has promised to "Come again, and receive us unto Himself." (John 14: 1-6) Read also the following. (Rev 2: 24-26); (Rev 3: 10); (1 Thess 4: 13-18); (1 Thess 1: 10); (Rom 5: 9); (Rev 4: 5) The state of the "Mother of Harlots" will be left to the seven headed beast with ten horns who will turn upon his rider and utterly destroy this "Integrated Religion." (Rev 17-18)

With the world in confusion and mankind craving more and more of the material advantages, the issue is no longer "Right or Wrong" but rather "Might and Power." The revival of "Paganism" is sweeping the whole world and is well established in the western world, preparing the way for a "One World Government" with a Dictator under the control of Satan. He will be sought and accepted, regardless of circumstances and consequences. With the satanic power in control, the beast will deceive the people, with all sorts of miracles. The religious element must be put forward, as Satan prepares a "Dictatorial take over" with a Religious Atmosphere. This will unite the whole world under his control. The revival of the Roman Empire is taking place in this present day, with the revival of the "Babylonian Religion." It is taking a present day form, under the cloak of ecumenicism, and the Bible calls it "Mystery Babylon" with "The Woman" arrayed in purple (royalty) and scarlet (priestly). (Rev.17:1-4.)

In God's omniscience, the Bible has recorded these things to come and it behooves us to take careful note of God's prophecies. Unregenerate man in his rebellion against God is unaware of God's plans for eternity and ignores God's mighty working power, under the deception of Satan. God has recorded in the Books of Daniel and Revelation, predictions of the emergence of that great Dictator with seven powerful heads of state and a ten horned kingdom. This is not a figure of speech but rather a literal figure under the power of Satan. The seven heads of the past represented seven great empires, namely Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Medo Persian, Grecian-Macedonia, Rome of the past and the Revival of the Roman Empire of the future. The ten horns will be the ten nations of the Revived Roman Empire, which already has it's beginning through the European nations of the common market. After the beast is established and dissolves three of the ten nations, he will turn against his religious rider, even the woman of that Great City called Rome and utterly destroy her power. We know that when the Lord comes, and the Great Battle of Armageddon takes place, all of Satan's domain shall crumble and the "Mystery City of Babylon" will fall and both "The Queen" (Rev 18: 7) and "The Religious City of Satan" shall come to an end. The wealth and power of this mighty ecumenical religion, which had it's origin at the time of Nimrod, with the "Mother/Child" symbol shall be brought down forever. From the Tower of Babel until the destruction of that Great City of Rome, represents thousands of years of religious reign by the mother of all religions. In a moment it shall be brought down in judgement, prior to the second advent of the Lord Jesus Christ. This destruction shall take place during the Great Tribulation. "Behold I will cast her into bed, and them that commit adultery with her into GREAT TRIBULATION" (Rev 2: 22) Today, God is calling to all Believers to come out from this wicked ecumenical religion before this judgement falls upon her. "And I heard

another voice from heaven saying, **COME OUT OF HER MY PEOPLE, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.**" (Rev 18: 4)

Friend, whoever you may be, you must make the choice between religion or the Lord Jesus Christ. Remember that religion is always man's relation with man, but true Christianity is man's relation with God. The Lord has promised in His Word to take the true church of Christ "*Out from the wrath to come*" (1 Thess 1: 10) We who have put our trust in the Lord Jesus Christ as our personal Savior are members of this "True Heavenly Church" and the Eternal Son of God is in charge as the head of the church. Christ has entered into the Holy of Hollies once and forever, offering His blood for the remission of our sins. This has been accepted by God the Father and Christ had all authority as both "King / Priest" forever after the order of Melchizedek. Christ is the One God and One Mediator between God and man. (1 Tim 2: 5) We need not worry about the Babylonian religion with the deceit of a queen of heaven and mother/child worship, for we look for the "New Jerusalem," that "Holy City" which will come down from heaven, by the hand of God. We look for the "New Heavens" and the "New Earth" where death shall be no more, where God shall wipe away all tears, no more sorrow, nor crying and no more pain as the present things shall pass away and all things shall be made new. (Rev 21: 4) Student of the Bible, do not trust in the religions of this world, whatever form or greatness that it portrays. They are all doomed to perish. Depend upon God's Written Word as we conclude this chapter. God is calling out a great peculiar people unto Himself through His Eternal Son. We are God's ambassadors and witnesses unto the saving grace of our loving Lord! The gospel message which we proclaim is not based upon man's way of thinking, but rather upon the Written Word of God.

Q. WHAT IS THE ONLY REVELATION OF GOD BY GOD?

C. THE WRITTEN WORD OF GOD.

As Paul confronted a very superstitious crowd in Athens (Acts 17: 16-28a), so today we find many people of all nations who have certain superstitions, depending upon charms and luck, rather than on what the Word of God relates. Satan is continually deceiving the unregenerate man with all sorts of ways of worshiping something abstract with images and shrines. We need to depend upon God's Word for our direction and affection. "*God is a Spirit; and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.*" (John 4: 24) Fleshly worship is all in vain for we are spiritually born. We are reminded from the Word of God, "*Know ye not that ye are THE TEMPLE OF GOD, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?*" (1 Cor 3: 16) This is one of the most important steps to be made by all who desire to worship the true and living God. "*Jesus answered, and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.*" (John 3: 3) Differences in language has nothing to do with our communication with God. All languages were given by God and regardless of the language in which you pray, Almighty God understands, even better than you know your own language. True worship of God is in the spirit, from our bodies, which become the temple of God when we are born again by God the Holy Spirit. "*God, who made the world and all things in it, seeing that He is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands, neither is worshiped with men's hands, as though He needed anything, seeing He giveth to all life, and breath, and all things; And hath made of ONE BLOOD ALL NATIONS OF MEN to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation, That they should seek the Lord, if perhaps they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He is not far from every one of us; For in Him we live, and move, and have our being;*" (Acts 17: 24-28a)

Our life as believers is not made up by fables or myths, but established in the Eternal Word of God. God's Word is "*Alive and powerful!*" (Heb 4: 12) "*All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto ALL good works.*" (2 Tim 3: 16-17) Therefore, regardless of your mother tongue, your language is never a barrier in approaching God. In fact, our very thoughts can be heard by God, as we worship, according to His Word. Your cultural background need not be an hinderance in coming to the Lord, *IF* you have been born again by God the Holy Spirit.

As we conclude this chapter on the problem of the flood and the multitude of languages, may we thoroughly understand that all has been done by God to protect the "Messianic Lineage," which we will study in this next chapter. May we search out the answers in this chapter through the following questions.

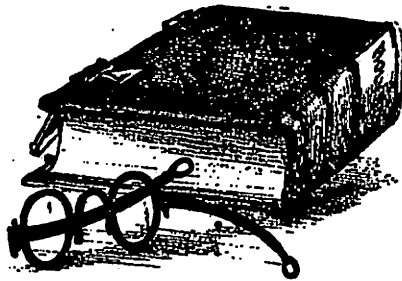
Use the Word of God freely as you write your answers. Our one desire is to help you to understand the Biblical teachings, being thoroughly grounded in the Word of God. Always base your answers upon the overall plan of God, keeping in mind the character of God. You cannot attain to the spiritual life in Christ, by mere knowledge of the Word of God. We are told, *"But as we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ, His Son cleanseth us from all sin."* (1 John 1: 7) We should walk as new creatures in Christ Jesus. *"Therefore, we are buried with Him by baptism unto death, that as Christ was raised from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life."* (Romans 6: 4) God expects us as believers to walk worthy of our high calling in Christ Jesus. Since we have been born again by the Holy Spirit, we need to realize that He is also our ever present help and He can keep us pure and clean. *"This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh."* (Galatians 5: 16) We have been adopted into the Royal Family of God, and we need to so walk in this life, as well pleasing before our Royal God. *"That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto His kingdom of glory."* (1 Thessalonians 2: 12)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER SIX

1. How many languages did Adam and Eve speak? Give reasons from the Bible.
2. Where in the Bible do we have the first record of writing?
3. What was Satan's aspiration, as he dealt with man before the flood?
4. What was man's aspiration before the flood? Give Scripture.
5. Explain (*Genesis 11: 6*)
6. Write a short essay on, "One World Religion" quote Scripture.
7. Explain (*Daniel 9: 24-27*)
8. Explain (*Revelation 18: 1-24*)
9. When will Christ rule with a "Rod of Iron"?
10. Why did God have to separate the people at the Tower of Babel?
11. Name 5 cults that exist today?
12. What did the Apostle Paul find in Athens?
13. What is God's prime purpose in creating mankind?
14. Explain (*Genesis 3: 15*)
15. Where did religion first begin and with whom?
16. Write an essay on "Mystery Babylon."
17. What is to happen to "Mystery Babylon," according to Revelation chapters 17 and 18?
18. Name 4 things identified in relationship to the Tower of Babel.

19. Give several reasons why the world is drifting toward a "One World Religion"?
20. Explain (*Exodus 23: 31-32*)
21. Explain (*Deuteronomy 7: 5*)
22. Explain (*Romans 1: 25*)
23. Write an essay on "Nimrod and His Wife Semiramis."
24. Explain the "The Mother / Child" religion.
25. Write a brief report on "The Revival of Paganism."
26. Explain the "Integrated Religion."
27. Explain "Mystery Babylon."
28. Why is the written Word of God so important in order to "Live for Christ"?

CHAPTER SEVEN



WHY WAS ISRAEL CHOSEN AS A FAVORITE OF GOD?

It may seem strange to some uninformed people, that God, who is no respecter of persons, should choose one nation above all others. Until you know the reason for God's choice, it looks like the Lord was prejudice when He chose the lineage of Seth, then Shem and finally Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. We will discuss this as we set forth three different but important reasons for God's choice. God was willing to sacrifice His Eternal Son through His incarnate body to deal eternally with the sin question. God actually separated this small pin point world as compared to many great planets to deal specifically with sin. Satan too was aware of the importance of this earth, when God breathed upon Adam and he became a living soul, in the likeness of Almighty God. Also a body was prepared for His Eternal Son, before the foundation of the world. These issues must be considered as we answer that all important question, "Why was Israel chosen as a favorite of God?" Let us examine this question in the light of God's Eternal Word. If we were not aware of the complete plan of God as recorded in the Bible, then we would have difficulties in knowing the Divine viewpoint.

Q. WHY DID GOD DIVIDE THE NATIONS?

A. THE IMPORTANCE OF THE DIVIDING OF THE NATIONS.

There is a striking declaration from God, in the Bible, about the nations of the world: *"When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when He separated the sons of Adam, He set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel. For the Lord's portion is His people; Jacob is the lot of His inheritance. He found him in a desert land, and in the waste, howling wilderness; He led him about, He instructed him, He kept him as the apple of his eye."* (Deut 32: 8-10) This is quite a statement from the Lord Himself and on the surface, it would look like God was a respecter of persons. However, there is a very vital purpose in this choice through God's Omniscience.

God had to separate Israel from all the other nations to verify His statement in (Genesis 3: 15) We have already explored into the reason for the flood and the changing of the languages, to defeat the demon possession of the human race and to separate a Messianic lineage from a distinct and protected family. Had God not separated the nations and given them different languages, there would have been an intermarrying situation, with the result of losing the specific lineage for the Messiah. God used some strange combinations to bring this about in ways past our understanding. However, as we look back to the coming of the Messiah, we can thoroughly understand God's marvelous provision and precision. God is sovereign and no one is greater than the Triune God. Had the nations not been separated from the nation Israel, Satan would have attempted something similar to time before the flood and with the tower of Babel. Yes, Israel failed the Lord many times, but God always had His remnant that served Him and kept in fellowship with God through the sacrifices. Perhaps the most important reason for God's choice of Israel was a channel through which the Messiah could enter as God/Man. *"Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, Who being in the form of God thought it not robbery to be equal with God, But made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men;....and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross."* (Philippians 2: 5-8)

Q. HOW DID GOD KEEP HIS PROMISE TO ADAM AND EVE?

B. THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE IS NECESSARY.

In order for God to safeguard His declaration according to *Genesis 3:15*; He had to protect a lineage through which He would send the Messiah who would bruise the head of Satan, He had to give special protection to certain ones. This was no problem to God, who knows the end from the beginning. God, in keeping with the freedom of choice of both angels and mankind, had to take that into account as the rightful lineage was chosen. After the flood, God had three sources only through which the Messiah could come. Noah's son "Shem" was chosen for the coming of the Messiah to pay the total debt of sin. According to the evidence from the Bible, Satan was determined to destroy every trace of lineage, BUT GOD knew his every intent and determination.

HOW DID SATAN TRY TO DISTROY GOD'S PLAN?

Let us enumerate some of the ways in which Satan tried to utterly destroy God's plans for all ages.

1. The deception that he presented to Eve. (*Gen 3: 1-6*)
2. The murder of Abel. (*Gen 4: 8*)
3. Lamech as a tool in Satan's hands. (*Gen 4: 3-4*)
4. The indwelling of human beings by demons. (*Gen 6: 1-7*)
God had to send the flood. (*Gen 6: 8 - Gen 14:1*)
5. Noah's sin of drunkenness. (*Gen 9: 20-23*)
6. Ham became a tool of Satan, being cursed. (*Gen 9: 24-25*)
7. The tower of Babel. (*Gen 11: 1-9*)
8. Abram's wife Sarah barren (*Gen 11: 30*)
9. Abram forsakes the promise of God and journeys to Egypt. (*Gen 12: 10-20*)
10. Satan's domain of Sodom and Gomorrah, a threat to God's chosen lineage in Abram. (*Gen 13: 14-18*)
11. Satan's scheme through Sarah to destroy God's promise of the Messiah through a bond woman named Hagar. (*Gen 16: 1-5*)
12. Abraham's failure at Gerar. (*Gen 20: 1-18*)
13. The continual conflict between the seed of Ishmael and the seed of Isaac. (*Gen 21: 1*) - *to the present time.*
14. The Messianic lineage in Isaac tested as an offering. (*Gen 22: 1-14*)
15. Esau becomes a tool in Satan's hands. (*Gen 25: 34*)
16. The promised lineage through Jacob fled, but not forsaken by God. (*Gen 28: 1-22*)
17. Jacob deceived by Laban. (*Gen 29: 1-35*)
18. Wickedness shown to Joseph by his brothers. (*Gen 37: 8-36*)

19. The captivity of the Messianic lineage in Egypt for 400 years. (The book of Exodus)
20. Israel's wanderings for 40 years, kept by the power of God in spite of many failures. (The Book of Joshua)
21. The Tribe of Dan becomes Satan's deception. (*Gen 49: 17*)
Dan not mentioned among the 144,000 Tribulation witnesses. (*Rev 7: 4-8*)
22. The wicked judges, kings and priests in the Old Testament were tools in Satan's hands.
23. The almost destruction of the whole tribe of Judah under king Ahasuerus (Xerxes) who reigned from 486-465 B.C. (*Ezra 4: 3-6*) Refer to the Book of Esther.
24. The rightful lineage of Messianic Judah was threatened when Elimelech died in the land of Moab. "The kinsman Redeemer" by the name of Boaz was God's provision. (The Book of Ruth)
25. Satan's tactics to destroy God's people as he tried to get Job to curse God. (The Book of Job)
26. King David's sin. (*2 Sam 7: 12-17*)
27. The captivities of Israel throughout the Bible.
28. Elizabeth being barren, but God provided. (*Lk 1: 5-25*)
29. The virgin Mary kept by God. (*Lk 1: 26-38*)
30. Jesus birth declared when proclaimed by the decree of Caesar Augustus. (*Lk 2: 1-7*)
31. The attempt to kill the Messiah under king Herod. (*Matt 2: 1-23*)
32. Jesus tempted in the wilderness by Satan. (*Matt 4: 1-11*); (*Mk 1:12-13*); (*Lk 4: 1-13*)
33. Christ rejected by the rulers of Israel. (*Matt 27: 25*)
34. Christ tormented by the evil ones. (*Matt 27: 27-44*); (*Ps. 22*)
35. The disciples would have been molested, but Christ breathed upon them the Holy Spirit, until the day of Pentecost. (*Jn 20: 22*)
36. Peter was to be sifted by Satan, but Christ intervened. (*Lk 22: 31*)
37. The church was persecuted and scattered. (*Jn 20: 19*); (*Acts 4: 1-12*); (*Acts 8: 1*)
38. The worldly Governments have persecuted the believers down through the ages. (*Heb 11: 36-40*)
39. Satan as the god of this world system is continually brainwashing the minds of many, lest they believe the Gospel message. (*2 Cor 4: 3-4*)

From this partial listing of Satan's great power, we can depend upon our Almighty God to bring us through with victory. For it is written, "Ye are of God, little children, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world." (*1 Jn 4: 4*) God has preserved the Messianic hope through Israel, and will do a mighty work in and through you as you yield entirely unto the Lord. God used ways past our finding out

to provide the Redeemer of our souls. The human channel had to be used to pay the debt that was placed against the human race.

Q. WHO ARE SOME OF THE PEOPLE IN THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE?

C. A CHANNEL FOR THE INCARNATION OF THE ETERNAL SON OF GOD.

One of the early prophetic utterances about the Messianic lineage was concealed in the last prophetic message of Jacob. *"Judah thou art he whom thy brethren shall praise: thy hand shall be in the neck of thine enemies; thy father's children shall bow down before thee. Judah is a lion's whelp: from the prey, my son, thou art gone up; he stooped down, he crouched as a lion, and as an old lion. Who shall rouse him up? The scepter shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be. Binding his foal unto the vine, and his ass's colt unto the choice vine, he washed his garments in wine, and his clothes in the blood of grapes. His eyes shall be red with wine, and his teeth white with milk." (Genesis 49: 8-12)* This prophecy is very significant with various events referring to the Eternal Christ. The Lord will be worshipped, His enemies will be destroyed, His appearance as a young lion will have the experience as of an old lion, because He will be from everlasting to everlasting the same. This also is the first reference to the eternal seed of Judah through Christ, who shall reign forever and ever. The people of all nations shall be gathered by the Lord. He shall ride triumphantly into Jerusalem upon the colt, and one day His wrath will be kindled against all of His enemies. *"And I saw heaven opened and, behold, a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war. His eyes were like a flame of fire, and on His head were many crowns; and He had a name written, that no man knew, but He Himself. And He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood; and His name is called The Word of God." (Rev 19: 11-13) "And He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God." (Rev 19: 15B)* Perhaps it would be fitting to quote a stanza from that great hymn, "The Battle Hymn of the Republic."

Mine eyes have seen the glory of the coming of the Lord,

He is trampling out the vintage where the grapes of wrath are stored;

He hath loosed the fate-ful lightning of His terrible swift sword-

His truth is marching on, Glory! glory, hallelujah!

There is another factor that points to the channel which God has chosen for the Incarnate One to enter this world. *"But thou, Bethlehem Ephrathah, though thou be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of thee shall He come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel, whose going forth have been from of old, from everlasting." (Micah 5: 2)* The rulers of Israel knew this and should have accepted Christ the Incarnate, but they rejected Him completely. It is amazing to realize that Herod wanted to kill the Messiah, and did all that he could do to destroy the Messianic lineage, as a tool in the hands of Satan. The leaders of Israel, who were well versed in the prophecy of the Scriptures, even told Herod where the Christ child would be born. (Matt 2: 1-12)

Another very important factor that we have in the Scripture is the Word of the Lord to King David. It was when David wished to build the Lord's house (2 Sam 7: 1-3) It is again referred to in (1 Chronicles 17: 11-14) *"And it shall come to pass, when thy days are ended, that thou must go to be with thy fathers, that I will raise up thy seed after thee, who shall be of thy sons; and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build me an house, and I will establish his throne forever. I will be His Father, and he shall be my son; and I will not take my mercy away from him, as I took it from him that was before thee, (Saul) But I will settle him in mine house and in my kingdom forever, and His throne shall be established for evermore."*

The Bible is very definite about the channel through which the Messiah would come, and did come. *"And thine house (King David) and thy kingdom shall be established forever before thee; thy throne shall be established forever." (2 Sam 7: 16)* This is known as the unconditional Davidic Covenant, upon which

the eternal kingdom of righteousness by Christ will be established forever and ever. Solomon received word from God as well as David, but with a warning to be scattered if they would not keep God's commandments. *"Then I will establish the throne of thy kingdom upon Israel forever, as I promised to David, thy father, saying, There shall not fail thee a man upon the throne of Israel. But if ye shall at all turn from following me, ye or your children, and will not keep my commandments and my statutes which I have set before you, but go and serve other gods, and worship them, then will I cut off Israel out of the land which I have given them, and this house, which I have hallowed for my name, will I cast out of my sight; and Israel shall be a proverb and a byword among all people."* (1 Kings 9: 5-7) This has been the judgement for Israel for almost 2,000 years and now at the end of this age of grace, Israel is returning to her land for her final judgement during the great tribulation. Those Hebrew families, returning to Palestine, do not think that they are returning for punishment, but rather to possess the land as a nation. Eventually, Israel will then be purified and made ready for the millennial kingdom of a thousand years. Israel has been scattered because of her disobedience and because of the covenants with Abraham and David, they will return. However, disobedience to God's commands always brings judgement, either directly or indirectly.

Q. HOW DID GOD PROTECT THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE?

GOD'S INCARNATION CHANNEL PRESERVED.

As God has dealt with Israel from her very conception, there has always been a threat against the Messianic lineage by the satanic powers. God would allow the evil forces to advance so far and no further! God is sovereign over all and preserves His promises. It was like God is playing a game of hide and seek with Satan and his demons and God is always aware of everything and can never be outmanoeuvred. Satan could not destroy the human body of the Messiah, because it was prepared before the foundations of the world, long before Satan came into existence. *"Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us; for it is written, Cursed is everyone that hangeth on a tree; That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith."* (Galatians 3: 13-14) God Himself had to take upon Himself a form of man apart from the capability of sin, so that redemption could be made possible without a possibility of error or failure. *"For He is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us, having abolished in His flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances, to make in Himself of two one new man, so making peace; and that He might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby."* (Ephesians 2: 14-16) This was something that Satan thought would be impossible, that the very God would take upon Himself a weak vessel like the flesh. The Lord has completed the promise of God the Father and came into this world to be the sacrifice for all. *"Wherefore, when He cometh into the world, He saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body hast thou prepared me;"* (Hebrews 10: 5) Christ became that channel through which God provided redemption, to all who would believe.

CONCLUSION

May you, as a student of the Bible, be able to understand why God separated Israel as a nation from all other nations in order to pin point the Messianic hope, securing the entrance of the Incarnate Christ into this world. Christ's perfect human body was created before the foundations of the world, but His entrance into this world was through the virgin birth. This made possible the outpouring of God the Holy Spirit upon all flesh. (Joel 2: 28); (Joel 3: 16-17) The Lord Jesus Christ is both 100% God / Man, which was necessary to become the Redeemer of the world, as The Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the whole world. The choice of acceptance or rejection remains to every individual, ever born or to be born into this world. Israel as a nation was the instrument through which God preserved the Messianic lineage. May I also remind you that the nation Israel is the only nation that has been given a title deed from God to a portion of this world. (Deut 32: 8); (Gen 13: 14-18); (Gen 15: 18) We as Christians are counted as the stars of the heavens, and Israel as the sands of the sea. (Genesis 22: 15-17) Israel shall eventually conquer all her enemies.

At present there is a great conflict in the world courts as to which nation is the owner of the Middle

East, but that has been settled with God during time in memorial. God has blessed various nations in the past, for a particular project to be fulfilled, but never has there been a statement given to any other nation like God has given to Israel. All nations are blessed in and through Abraham and are considered as the stars of heaven in comparison to Israel as the sands of the sea. We in this age of grace are called the "Ecclesia" or the "Called Out Ones" and we are pilgrims and so-journeymen in this world. As Christ declared, "*They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.*" (John 17: 16)

As we deal with various difficult questions from the Bible, may we clearly understand the principles which God the Holy Spirit reveals. Yes, there are some difficult Bible questions that we may have but for the answers we must wait by faith, trusting God, knowing that He worketh all things toward an eternal good. (Rom 8: 28) What we are teaching in this book is to take God at His Word, knowing that He knows all truth. It is also important that we keep the Bible in context, and consider, to whom God is speaking. The cultural background must also be considered as we deal with questionable truths. As we rightly divide the truth, we must be cautious not to destroy the truth. Regardless of the time period, there is but one plan of salvation, which has never been changed, nor needs to be changed.

Q. HOW SHOULD WE STUDY THE BIBLE?

In closing this chapter may I again remind you of important principles as you study God's Word.

1. Understand the characteristics of God as found in the Bible.
2. Be born of God the Holy Spirit.
3. Keep on being filled by God the Holy Spirit.
4. Do not grieve the Holy Spirit by living in sin.
5. Allow God the Holy Spirit to guide you into all truth.
6. As you study the Bible, be aware as to whom God is directly speaking in particular passages.
7. Keep the Word of God in context.
8. Understand the plan of God and His ultimate aim.
9. *Inter-relate* the truth of God, in order to better understand God's principles.
10. Do not consider what the Bible teaches as just one of many religions, but rather as principles in our relationship with God.
11. Do not consider God to be finished with Israel just because Israel is being punished.

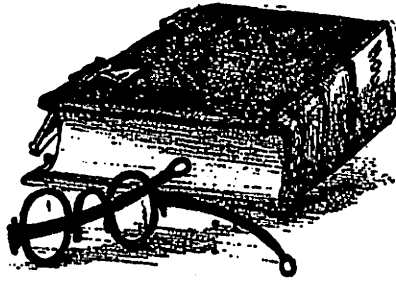
God's ways are past finding out, and His wisdom is limitless and His power boundless! As we study all difficult Biblical truths, we must always account God as the supreme authority Who cannot be challenged in any way. No matter how much power that He may bestow upon His creatures, He always will have resources of power beyond the sum total of His creation. This marvelous character of the Triune God has desired for us as His creation to enter into His eternal glory. The freedom of choice has been granted to both the angels and mankind. God has given to us sufficient understanding with ample knowledge to choose. God desires true worshippers with their own personal desire to worship Him.

Just as God has chosen Israel as the apple of His eye, through faithful Abraham, so we are chosen in the beloved because of our faith in Christ. God's rules and regulations and the giving of the law were for our admonition as a school master to teach us the holiness of God. Our next study is concerning the necessity of the Mosaic law. God is always specific in His demands and is also consistent. These issues are to be studied, so that we might better understand the necessity of God's marvelous grace.

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER SEVEN

1. Write an essay on, "God is not a Respector of Persons." Use Scripture.
2. What lineage did God choose as a favorite nation from the sons of Noah? Scripture.
3. Why was Israel separated from all other nations? Scripture.
4. Why did God divide the nations according to *Deuteronomy 32: 10*?
5. Explain "The seed of the Woman" as it is related to the Redeemer. Scripture.
6. Why was a particular "Messianic Lineage" necessary? Scripture.
7. Name 25 ways recorded in the Bible that Satan tried to destroy God's plan of redemption. Scripture.
8. Write an essay on *Genesis 49: 8-12*; and *Revelation 19: 15b*.
9. What place in this whole world did God choose for His Son Jesus Christ to enter this world? Scripture.
10. Explain *1 Chronicles 17: 11-14*.
11. Give some references to the "Unconditional Covenant" that God made to King David.
12. Give some references that God made to His "Unconditional Covenant" with Abraham.
13. To which nation did God give a title deed to in a specific area. Scripture.
14. Why did God not give Christians a title deed in this world? Scripture.
15. As you study the Bible, name as many principles as possible which are necessary in a better understanding of the Bible.
16. Write an essay on *Deuteronomy 32: 8*.

CHAPTER EIGHT



WHY THE NECESSITY OF THE MOSAIC LAW?

In the beginning, at the creation of mankind, there were limited rules and regulations set before Adam and Eve. They were forbidden to eat from the tree of life which God reserved for Himself. Man was to dominate the world under certain conditions. When mankind became totally depraved, God had instituted a means of covering their sins through the sacrifice of animals. This is clearly obeyed by faithful Abel and rejected by wicked Cain. We have record of God communicating with certain ones such Adam and Eve, Enoch, Noah, Shem, Seth, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. We could name many Old Testament saints to whom God communicated, but this is sufficient as preparation in considering the Mosaic law. We have just finished our studies on the nation of Israel through whom God preserved the Messianic hope. Now through Moses, we want to consider why the Mosaic Law was necessary.

Q. WHAT IS THE CHARACTER OF GOD?

A. THE CHARACTER OF GOD.

God has high ideals for His creation especially for Angels and humans. As has been mentioned many times, God is not interested in a "Forced Worship," but desires a "Chosen Worship." God's characteristics are found throughout the Bible, but particularly in the Mosaic laws. These laws were not Moses' thoughts, but rather God's revelation. The standards of God relate to the character of God. The understanding of the character of God gives us insight to the demands of God. God's personality, "The Three in One," helps us in the understanding of the Bible. Without God the Holy Spirit teaching us, and a knowledge of the Word of God, many of these difficult questions cannot be answered. Let us examine God's personality as revealed in the Scriptures.

1. God is Love.

The sum total of love is manifested in the Godhead. However that love is restricted to meeting certain requirements. God loves the sinner but not his sin, therefore the sin barrier had to be removed for the individual to be partaker of that gracious Divine love. Many unbelievers prefer to dwell upon God's love and avoid God's requirements to receive that love. It is "Whosoever Believeth," accepting God's provision through His Eternal Son. *"Beloved, let us love one another; for love is of God, and everyone that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. In this was manifested the love of God toward us; that God sent His Only Begotten Son into the world that we might live through Him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins."* (2 John 4: 7-10)

2. God is Absolute.

There is nothing in God's eternal plan that ever has to be changed. There is no changing in the Godhead. *"Do not err, my beloved brethren. Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning."* (James 1: 16-17) This describes the absolute character of God, who is the same yesterday, today and forever.

3. God is absolute Holiness.

In order to understand the strict commandments of God, one must understand the absolute holiness of God. We cannot enter the presence of God apart from being completely covered by God's holiness. Moses discovered that the very ground upon which the presence of God was, was holy. (*Exod 3: 2-6*) This was very necessary for Moses to experience, in preparation for the giving of the law and ordinances, as well as the ten commandments. "*For I am the Lord your God: ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves, and ye shall be holy; for I am holy;*" (*Lev 11: 44a*) The angels in heaven recognize this great attribute of God. The seraphim as continual worshippers of God have beheld the holiness of God, "*And one cried unto another, and said, Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord of hosts; the whole earth is full of His glory.*" (*Isaiah 6: 3*) As we examine difficult questions in the Bible, we must realize that God is absolutely holy in all of His thoughts, words and deeds.

4. God is Absolutely Just in everything.

God's justice is superb and we must never judge or question God's justice. Whatever decisions the Godhead makes, they are perfect and just, based upon every provision to confirm God's declaration. "*To declare, I say at this time His righteousness: that He might be just, and the justifier of him who believeth in Jesus.*" (*Romans 3: 26*) God makes us justified by faith in the Lord Jesus Christ who becomes our justification. (*Roman 5: 1-2*)

5. God is Absolute Truth (Veracity).

When we read the Bible, we better believe it, for it is the truth, even though some statements are hard to believe, especially among the unregenerate. If there are difficult statements for our understanding, we must always remember that, "*For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, saith the Lord. For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts.*" (*Isaiah 55: 8-9*) There are many statements in the Bible, that we do not clearly understand and must accept as God's truth.

6. God is Eternal Life.

Life is necessary for understanding, making God our necessity. "*All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made. In Him was life; and the life was the light of men.*" (*John 1: 3-4*) God does not have life as we do but is the source of all life. That is why Christ, the Eternal Son of God could say, "*I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.*" (*John 14: 6*) That is why we must be mindful of the Creator above the creation.

7. God is Immutable (Never changes).

This world system is constantly changing and trying to correct errors of the past, but only sink deeper and deeper into despair. They think they have the problem solved, but eventually multiply their problems. The Lord Jesus Christ is God the Father's spokesman and we read, "*Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, and today, and forever.*" (*Heb 13: 8*) God is not a pragmatic God, and since He knows all things from the beginning, He never needs to change his plans.

8. God is Impeccable (He cannot sin).

If there was even the smallest possibility of God sinning it would be impossible for Him to overthrow the power and influence of sin. God knew that sin had to be dealt with by Himself at a great cost. That is why it took the very Eternal Son of God achieve this task, by becoming the "Sin Bearer," judging sin at the cross of Calvary. The Eternal Son of God could not be accused of sin in any form. The Lord was led by the Holy Spirit into the wilderness, fasting for forty days, being tempted by Satan. This was not a test as to whether God could sin, but rather a revelation to all that it is impossible for God to sin. (*Matt 4: 1-11*) (*Mk 1: 12-13*) (*Lk 4: 1-13*)

9. God is Sovereign Over All.

It may not seem to the unregenerate that God is not sovereign because sin seems to have dominion in this present world system. Little do they know that God has already dealt with total sin at the cross and the judgement has not been completely immediately. In understanding the plan of God for all ages, then

and then only can one understand God's sovereignty. *"Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God. Thou turnest man to destruction, and sayest, Return, ye children of men, For a thousand years in thy sight are but as yesterday when it is past, and as a watch in the night."* (Psalm 9: 2-4) God ruleth and reigneth over all and in due time, according to God's time, what He has determined will come to pass.

10. God is Omniscient over all (He knows everything).

Biblical information should be sufficient for us to acknowledge the omniscience of God, as all that God had predicted in the past has come to past, exactly as "Thus Saith The Lord!" We can thoroughly trust God to bring to past every future prediction. It is also marvelous that God can "Pre-televis" future events as He did with the prophets, and what is to come to pass in the future. The Apostle John, on the Isle of Patmos is an excellent example of God's awareness of everything that will happen, knowing the end from the beginning. *"God who at sundry times and in diverse manners spoke in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, hath in these last days spoken unto us by His Son, whom He appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the world."* (Hebrews 1: 1-2)

11. God is Omnipresent (He is everywhere)

The creatures of God can only be in one place at a time, whether they be angels of mankind. Since God knows everything and is aware of all things, this could only be possible as God extends His power over all! The Triune God is not limited to space and to those who have put their trust in Him, *"God is our refuge and strength, a very present help in trouble."* (Psalm 46:1) We have many Biblical examples of those trying to flee from the presence of God. Just to name a few, 1. Adam and Eve, 2. Cain tried to hide away, 3. God found Abram in Ur of the Caldeans, 4. God was mindful of Moses as a babe, 5. Elijah fled for fear of Jezebel and was waiting to die, but God found him and fed him, 6. Jonah was found by God in the belly of a great fish, 7. Saul was met by God on the road to Damascus. There is nothing hidden from God, and please take notice, not even to your inward thoughts. *"And is a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart."* (Hebrews 4: 12b)

12. God is omnipotent (All powerful).

Although God has given special powers to His creatures, we must always realize that these powers are under the sovereignty of God. God can always veto or control those that would try to supersede the power given to them. Some angels tried to go too far in their abilities and they now are prisoners of God until their final judgement. (Jude 6) Lucifer was given tremendous power when he was created. He still has that power but is still under the control of Almighty God. The Triune God have the sum total of all power and nothing can be done contrary to their sovereign rights. Lucifer who became Satan must always get permission from God who is sovereign over all. God has given all believers, during this age of grace, God the Holy Spirit. That is why, *"Greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world."* (1 John 4: 4b) As Christians have been commissioned to go into all the world and preach the gospel and teaching the Word of God, we are empowered by the Triune God. *"And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All Authority (Power) is given unto me in heaven and earth."* (Matthew 28: 18)

13. God is the sum total of Righteousness.

One day the Lord Jesus Christ will come and rule and reign in this world, establishing His rule of righteousness. This will be a tremendous revelation to all creation as to God's righteousness. *"For the righteous Lord loveth righteousness; His countenance doth behold the upright."* (Psalm 11: 7) Nothing could be clearer than this and the amazing fact is that you and I can be partakers of that Divine righteousness, through Christ Jesus. This righteousness will be an eternal possession of ours when we receive our glorified bodies, when the Rapture takes place.

May I conclude the study of these attributes of God by quoting, *"Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are His judgements, and His ways past finding out! For who hath known the mind of the Lord? Or who hath been His counselor? Or who hath first given to Him, and it shall be recompensed unto Him again? For of Him, and through Him and to Him are all things: To whom be glory forever. Amen."* (Romans 11: 33-36)

Q. WHY WERE THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD GIVEN TO MOSES?

B. THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD.

The commandments of God reveal the tremendous requirements necessary to come into the very presence of God. They were entrusted to the Hebrew nation through whom the Messiah would come. God knew that no one but the Triune God could keep those commandments and ordinances which were given to Moses. You may ask, "Why then did God bother to give such commandments?" The simple answer is, "God was showing to totally depraved mankind, what His requirements were to have access into His very presence" God was demonstrating and revealing to mankind His absolute and perfect character. Only God Himself could keep those commandments, which made us utterly dependent upon God to clothe us in His righteousness. *"For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven."* (2 Cor 5: 1-2) The Eternal Son of God came to fulfill the law and the commandments in our stead so that we might have the assurance of a glorified body which is prepared for all those who put their trust in the Lord Jesus Christ.

God had entrusted these commandments with Israel, who in turn was to observe them and teach them to the nations. The offering of animal sacrifices were to be practiced by faith. These sacrifices could not blot out their transgressions, but merely cover them until the Supreme Sacrifice of the Eternal Son of God. The commandments acted as a school master. *"Wherefore, then, serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. Is the law, then against the promises of God? God forbid; for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. But the Scripture hath concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. Wherefore, the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. For ye are all the sons of God by faith in Christ Jesus."* (Galatians 3: 19-26)

The law and the commandments have been introduced to mankind, so that we might know the absolute perfection of God. To attain such perfection would be impossible apart from God's provision. The Old Testament saints needed a cover for their sins, until God would provide payment for their sins. It was an act of faith to offer animal sacrifices, waiting upon the perfect impeccable sacrifice of the Eternal Son of God. We, during this age of grace, cannot ignore the commandments of God and although we still have the sin nature, and we sin, we have an Advocate with God the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. *"My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous."* (1 John 2: 1) Nothing is hidden from God, and we better not try to hide our sins for God is aware of them. God is waiting for you and me to acknowledge them and confess them to Him. *"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."* (1 John 1: 9)

The commandments from God have been given through Moses, not only for the teaching of Israel and in preparation of the coming of the Messiah, but also for totally depraved man to realize the hopelessness of human reform. You look into the Word of God and see the absolute perfection of our living God, and then look into the mirror of our depraved nature and then, and then only, do you discover the utter need that we have. When we realize that we are hopeless sinners apart from God, then we are ready to receive the provision by God through the Lord Jesus Christ. *"Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in Him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in Him, who is the head of all principality and power;"* (Colossians 2: 8-10) This clear statement from the Word of God gives us the clue to the commandments of God. There is no room for self attainment apart from the Triune God! When we as individuals accept the redemption offered by God through Christ, then the sin barrier is removed and we become new creatures in Christ Jesus. *"Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creation; old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation; To wit, that God was in Christ reconciling the world unto Himself, not imputing their*

trespasses unto them, and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.” 2 Corinthians 6:17-19. The commandments were given to us so that we might realize the absolute perfection that God requires. When we compare what God requires and what we are naturally, we then must accept what God has provided in and through His Eternal Son, the Lord Jesus Christ.

Q. WHAT ARE THE JUDGEMENTS OF GOD?

C. THE JUDGEMENTS OF GOD.

The judgements of God are severe and demanding and his laws impossible for us to comply with as human beings, who have fallen short of the glory of God. (*Rom 3: 23*) The wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is life. (*Romans 6: 23*) “*But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed.*”

(*Isaiah 53: 5*) God's judgement for the sins of the whole world fell upon the Lord Jesus Christ, at Calvary's cross. The Holy Spirit caused John the Baptist to cry out, “*Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world.*” (*John 1: 29b*) All the judgements of God in the past against the ungodly is but preliminary to the final judgement at the “Great White Throne.” The unpardonable sin will be the rejection of the Son. There is no human merit that would be sufficient for the removal of the sin barrier.

God has judged in various ways in the past and all of these are but a partial judgement, removing the offenders of God's laws temporarily, until their final eternal judgement. Here from the Bible are some of these judgements of the past, present and future:

1. Lucifer and 1/3rd of the angels. (*Ezek 28: 16-18*) (*Rev 12: 3-4*)
2. Adam and Eve expelled from the garden of Eden. (*Gen 3: 22-24*)
3. Cain became a fugitive because of murdering his brother Abel. (*Gen 4: 8-15*)
4. The flood. (*Gen 7: 1-24*)
5. Ham and the Canaanites cursed. (*Gen 9: 24-25*)
6. Tower of Babel caused God to multiply languages. (*Gen 11: 1-9*)
7. Destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah by fire and brimstone. (*Gen 19: 15-26*)
8. Punishment against Egypt. (*Exod 7: 14*) - (*Exod 14: 31*)
9. Judgement upon Israel due to the golden calf set up as their god. (*Exod 32: 1-29*)
10. Korah's rebellion and God's plague. (*Num 16: 1-49*)
11. Judgement against Edom. (*Num 20: 14-22*) (*Gen 25: 30*) (*Obad 1: 10*)
12. Israel wonders in the wilderness for 40 years because of unbelief. (*Num 13: 1*) - (*Num 14: 38*)
13. The destruction of the idol worshippers of the land of Canaan by Israel. (*Joshua and Judges*)
14. The nations judged under the reign of Solomon. (*1 Kings 4: 1*) - (*1 Kings 10: 29*) (*2 Chron 1: 1*) - (*2 Chron 9: 31*)
15. The Babylonian captivity of Judah and Benjamin and the remaining tribes under Syria, plus other slaveries and scatterings. (*2 Chron 10: 1*) - (*2 Chron 36: 23*) (*Jer 25*) (*Judges 3:1-8*) (*Judges 4: 3*)

(Judges 6: 1) (Judges 10: 8) (Judges 13: 1) That is over 1,000 years of judgement.

16. The scattering of Israel because of their rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ as the Messiah. *(Dan 9: 20-27) (Matt 26: 45) (Matt 23: 37-39)*
17. Jesus foretells of judgements against cities because of their unbelief. *(Matt 11: 20-24)*

CONCLUSION

These are but a few of the many partial judgements upon the nations. Future judgements on earth will happen during the Great Tribulation as recorded in Revelation chapter 6 through chapter 19. At the same time that the Great tribulation is happening on earth, all believers will be judged in heaven, as to their rewards, at the Judgement Seat of Christ. *(2 Cor 5: 10)* After the Great Tribulation ends Jesus Christ and all believers will return to earth and He will rule for 1000 years with a rod of iron. During that 1000 years rule of Jesus, the millennium, Satan and his demons will be bound for a season. Believe it or not, many will be deceived for the last time following the millennium when Satan is released for a short time before the battle of Armageddon. Then there will be the Great White Throne Judgement. It will be the final Judgement for every unregenerate person from all times. The Lord Jesus Christ in person will sit upon that throne and judge the billions of souls who rejected Christ as the Eternal Son of God. You may say, that would take years and years to judge all of those, but on the contrary, they will be judged swiftly and each record will be simultaneously judged, as their goodness falls short of that required by God the Father. It is at the Great White Throne that all of the unbelievers will be judged as to eternal damnation. *"Wherefore, God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name, That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth, and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God, the Father."* *(Philippians 2: 9-11)* Before the final judgement is passed upon these billions upon billions, there will be a unanimous acknowledgement that the Lord Jesus Christ is the Eternal Son of God. They will all bow before Christ and receive their final judgement of the eternal lake of fire. There will be no end of their punishment throughout eternity to come. All of these will remain forever in a living death, separated from God forever. *"And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hades delivered up the dead that were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire."* *(Revelation 20: 11-15)* *"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on Him that sent me, hath everlasting life and shall not come into judgement, but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in Himself, so hath He given to the Son to have life in Himself; And hath given Him authority to execute judgement also, because He is the Son of man. Marvel not at this; for the hour is coming, in which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice, And shall come forth: they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation."* *(John 5: 24-29)*

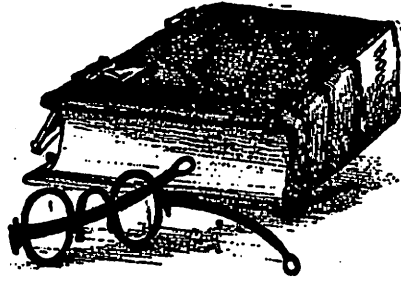
God has introduced His perfect law, which reflects His personality and all of His creation must abide accordingly. Since sin has entered this first creation, it must be totally dissolved. Both the angels and mankind have been given the freedom of choice and so they must be separated according to their individual choice. God has simplified the procedure, by His marvelous grace, and His simplicity of choice. *"Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is no other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."* *(Acts 4: 12)* God has simplified so great salvation so that all may understand. God the Father made the supreme and perfect sacrifice for the sins of the whole world. *"Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father, but by me."* *(John 14: 6)* If you have not accepted Christ as your personal Savior, do so immediately. We do not know just when the Rapture will take place. It could be any moment, and if you hesitate, you will be left

behind and find yourself in the great tribulation. If that is the case, accept Christ immediately, even though your faith will be sealed in death. Eternity is forever and it is now that you have the choice to spend eternity with all the glory of God, or eternal wrath of God in the lake of fire with Satan and all of his demons.

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER EIGHT.

1. Give your opinion as to the various ways in which God has revealed Himself in this world.
2. Write an essay on "God's Communication with Mankind, Before the giving of the Mosaic Law." Give Scripture.
3. Describe briefly as possible the various characteristics of the Triune God before the giving of the Mosaic law. Give Scripture.
4. What do the commandments of God reveal to mankind? Give Scripture.
5. Explain (*2 Corinthians 5: 1-2*)
6. Why did God give the commandments through Moses? Scripture please.
7. Explain (*Colossians 2: 8-10*)
8. Write on the subject, "God the Father In Christ Reconciling the World to Himself." (*2 Corinthians 6: 17-19*)
9. Give as many Biblical judgements as possible, quoting the Scriptures.
10. Explain (*Philippians 2: 9-11*)
11. Write concerning (*2 Corinthians 5: 10*) as in contrast to (*Revelation 20: 1-15*)
12. Why are the commandments of God necessary in this world? Scripture please.
13. How good must one be to get to heaven and be declared "BLAMELESS"? Scripture please.
14. Please write an essay on "The Necessity of the Commandments of God."

CHAPTER NINE



WHY WAS THE CRUCIFIXION NECESSARY?

God could have created a perfect holy "Utopia" if He had so wished. But to do so, it would have meant that He would have to set Himself up as a "Dictator," in full control of all of His creation, without anything or anyone having a choice in the matter. However, the Triune God had a perfect plan that would accomplish a perfect "Utopia." God will eventually achieve this holy utopia goal indirectly, and still give His subjects the freedom of choice. God being absolutely holy, righteous and just, refused to suppress anything that He desired to create. His desire to give a freedom of choice, placed the Triune Godhead in jeopardy. Through the freedom of choice the true test occurred among the angelic hosts which numbered in the billions. He gave these angels a tremendous capacity to think. Lucifer, was created full of all wisdom and he was given great authority. He had the highest position in the angelic host and was perfect in all his ways when created. (*Ezekiel 28: 12-15*)

This freedom of choice was given to all of the angels and this opened up the possibility of a conflict with the Godhead. The choice was made by one third of the angels to set up their own domain in opposition to their Creator. Their leader was Lucifer who became Satan, that devil and serpent. He led the pack against the Creator. As we have written extensively about this conflict in my Biblical Textbook, "One World Government Under Satan, Versus The Eternal Kingdom of God," we will briefly consider this conflict.

Q. WHY DID GOD LET SIN HAPPEN?

A. THE CONFLICT WITHIN GOD'S CREATION.

God in His Omniscience was aware of all of the scheming and planning by these angels. God was never in favor of or desired that they would scheme against Him, but the freedom of choice had to be allowed, in order to settle the sin question once and forever. This conflict within God's creation started in heaven and would be dealt with in the heavenlies by Almighty God in person.

God allowed this freedom of choice to enter a specially prepared world, given to these fallen angels. They became demons and set up their domain on earth and influenced weaker creatures, such as us human beings. The world has become the "Judgement Seat," where God has dealt with the sin question. "*The soul that sinneth, it shall die.*" (*Ezek 18: 20a*) This freedom of choice between good and evil was allowed by God for the purpose of allowing sin to be expressed so that God could judge it once and forever. God also made provision for forgiveness through an individual's choice to accept God's remedy for sin, or take the consequences of sin. As to the angels that sinned, there is no redemption or forgiveness for them, as they were not deceived, but rather chose to oppose God.

Mankind, on the other hand, was deceived, and being the weaker vessel fell into sin. "*For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.*" (*Romans 3: 23*) "*For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.*" (*Romans 6: 23*) Here we see the remedy which God has offered to those who would believe. How could God do this concerning the sin question? God in His omniscience was prepared to deal with the sum total of sin, long before it expressed itself in conflict with God. This judgement of all sin took place when the Eternal Son of God came into this world to pay the debt of sin. "*Behold the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sin of the world.*" (*John 1: 29b*) "*Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of God, and*

afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed.” (Isaiah 53: 4-5) It cost the Triune God a tremendous humiliation through their own creation. Read carefully Psalm 22 for a glimpse of what the Godhead was willing to do to remove sin.

That conflict that God has with His creation has brought victory to the Godhead. At the cross the sins of the whole world were fully paid by the Eternal Son of God, as prophesied in (*Psalm 22.*) Every soul that ever lived or ever will live has this choice to make, either pay the debt of their sin through an eternal living death, or accept the pardon which God offers to them, through the Lamb of God. The complete and final judgement of sin will take place at the Great White Throne judgement. There will be no escape route from this judgement of people who in their lifetime refused to accept God’s finished work on Calvary’s Cross. Since God has settled the sin question once and forever through the sacrifice of the Incarnate Son of God, death, hell and sin will be cast into the Lake of fire and remain there forever and ever.

Q. HOW DID GOD CARRY OUT HIS PLAN IN SPITE OF SATAN?

B. THE PLAN OF GOD WAS IN JEOPARDY.

Since God had to depend upon human agencies through which His Eternal Son of God would enter this world as The Incarnate, God’s plan was in jeopardy. Mankind was totally depraved and a “Kinsman Redeemer” was necessary with a human body, apart from sin. Satan had tried his very best to stop this in many ways, such as infiltrating and possessing the human body, and trying to destroy the Messianic lineage, corrupting the human seed, as well as trying to prevent the Messiah from coming. However, as Satan has failed in the past, so he will fail in the future and be finally cast into the lake of fire with the two beasts of that coming great tribulation. (*Rev 19: 20*) (*Rev 20: 10*) God in His sovereignty and omniscience is aware of every thought, word and deed of every evil force with which He is confronted. *“Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus, who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God, but made Himself of no reputation, and took upon Him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men; And, being found in fashion as a man, He humbled Himself and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.” (Philippians 2: 5-8)* Though Christ in His incarnate ministry, was also 100% the Eternal Son of God, He also was 100% man. In both natures He was impeccable, being made the perfect sacrifice for the sins of the whole world. Satan tried his very best to defeat the plan of God through Christ but failed and will fail to the very end. Praise God for the victory in and through the Lord Jesus Christ! *“Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to His cross; And, having spoiled principalities and powers, He made a show of them openly, triumphing over them in it.” (Colossians 2: 14-15)*

During Christ’s earthly ministry, Satan attempted to prevent Christ from being accepted, and caused the religious leaders to cry out against Christ. “Crucify Him, Crucify Him!” But Satan fell into the very pitfall prepared for him and the wrath of man, through the crucifixion, which removed the barrier of sin. God made a way of escape through the Cross from having to pour out His eternal wrath upon those who would believe. His perfect cleansing from all sin was provided by the Lamb of God, the perfect sacrifice. Satan knew the weakness of mankind and depended upon gaining the victory as the god of this world system. BUT GOD came in the form of man, apart from sin and delivered, “whosoever will” from the penalty of sin which is death. God had separated this earth from all of His creation in order to do away with sin and ungodliness forever. (*Daniel 9: 24*) “Oh the Love that drew salvation’s plan, Oh the grace that brought it down to man, Oh the mighty gulf that God did span at Calvary”! May Christ be your all in all as you proclaim the unsearchable riches of the Lord Jesus Christ. May you walk in the Spirit, and keep on being filled by Him, to the glory and praise of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Q. HOW DID THE CRUCIFIXION SHOW GOD’S GRACE?

C. THE GRACE OF GOD DEMANDED IT.

Before the grace of God can become active, it necessitated the removal of every obstacle. In the Old Testament, sins were merely covered through the animal sacrifices. *“But when the fullness of the time*

was come, God sent forth His Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons." (Galatians 4: 4-5) To understand this marvelous grace, which has been manifested to us through God's Eternal Son, study carefully my Biblical textbook on "The Amazing Grace" God could not activate His grace until the sin barrier was removed, by paying the debt of sin. Then and then only could mercy be shown, fulfilling the truth based upon God's perfect character.

Q. WHY WAS THE CRUCIFIXION NECESSARY?

Grace makes void every effort to earn salvation, which would be impossible anyway. So let us just itemize a few of the important issues involved with the necessity of the crucifixion.

1. Salvation can only come by the grace of God and not of works. (Eph 2: 5-10)
2. Divine grace based upon the character of God. (Heb 2: 1-4) (1 Peter 1: 15-23)
3. Divine grace is essential for the security of the believer throughout eternity. (John 6: 27-29) (Colossians 3: 3-4)
4. Divine grace makes possible living in the presence of God. (Eph 1: 4-6)
5. Divine grace is based upon the laws of God. (1 Peter 5: 10-11) (Ephesians 3: 7-12) (2 Thessalonians 1: 12)
6. Our eternal life with God will be forever based upon His Divine grace. (James 1: 17) (1 Peter 1: 3-9)
7. God's Divine grace is established by the new birth by God the Holy Spirit. (John 3: 5) (John 14: 16-17)
8. God's Divine grace makes possible a continual process of being filled by God the Holy Spirit. (Ephesians 5: 18)

The grace of God was fully proved, when God the Father was willing to send His Only begotten Son to die on a cross in order to save us from sin. Throughout eternity we will be mindful of the great price that God did pay in order to do away with sin and ungodliness forever and ever. This has made possible our new relationship with God. We have been brought into the very family relationship through God the Holy Spirit who has given us newness of life. Christianity is not a form of religion, man with man, but rather a relationship of man with God. Christianity is not a list of what man must do to earn eternal life, but rather the account of God reaching down in grace to fallen, sinful man. God asks only that man by faith believe in and receive His gift of eternal life.

Positionally believers are forever blameless in the presence of God. "And the very God of peace sanctify you wholly, and I pray God your whole spirit and soul be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Faithful is He that calleth you, who also will do it." (1 Thessalonians 5: 23-24) "For it is God who worketh in you both to will and to do of His good pleasure." (Philippians 2: 13) What a joy and privilege we have in and through Christ Jesus, who died, was buried, and rose again that we might have eternal life, and live forever, in the presence of Almighty God. There was no other way that redemption could come but through the sacrifice of the Lamb of God! In and through the death of the Lord, we have victory over the penalty of sin, and over the power of sin, and eventually over the very presence of sin.

Christ Himself has abolished all condemnation to those who will put their trust in Him. "For He is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us, Having abolished in His flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances, to make in Himself of two one new man, so making peace; and that He might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby, and came and preached peace to you who were afar off

and to them that were near. For through Him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father." (Ephesians 2: 14-18) Whether we were afar off or near, we all need the Lord Jesus Christ's finished work on Calvary to bring us into the very presence of God.

Q. DO GOOD WORKS GET PEOPLE TO HEAVEN?

SALVATION BY THE GRACE OF GOD APART FROM WORKS.

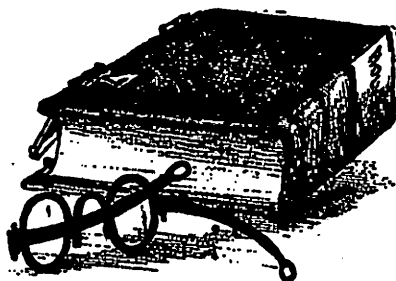
Whether without the law or with the law, we all depend upon the Grace of God through the finished work of Christ. There is nothing that we can do that would be sufficient for us to receive "So Great Salvation." It had to be God's complete provision. *"Who hath saved us, and called us with an holy calling, not according to our works, but according to His own purpose and grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began, But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Savior, Jesus Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light through the gospel," (2 Timothy 1: 9-10)* This statement from the Holy Spirit is tremendous, bring peace unto our souls that passes all understanding. It is absolutely impossible to have forgiveness of our sins without the supreme sacrifice of the Lord Jesus Christ. It is also impossible to have peace and eternal life without the grace of God shed abroad in our hearts. *"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God - Not of works, lest any man should boast." (Ephesians 2: 8-9) "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God, Being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in His blood, to declare His righteousness for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God; To declare, I say, at this time His righteousness, that He might be just, and the justifier of him who believeth in Jesus. Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? Of works? Nay, but by the law of faith, Therefore, we conclude that a man is justified by faith apart from the deeds of the law." (Romans 3: 23-28)*

There was no other alternative for the Triune God to provide salvation, but through the fulfillment of God's eternal law. *"And almost all things are by the law purged with blood, and without the shedding of blood is no remission." (Hebrews 9: 22)* In the case of our sins, it took the very impeccable Son of God who became The Lamb of God to take away our sins. God's eternal plan was established before the foundation of the world. It is allowing sin to run its evil course, judging the sum total of sin, past, present and future, at the cross. This made possible for God to judge all evil forces, condemning the sum total of sin, to be cast into the lake of fire. Death and hell will also be cast into the lake of fire, along with the devil and all of the fallen angels. There will be no escape route whatsoever, and God's Word reminds us, *"And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." (Revelation 20: 14-15)* As the crucifixion of the Lord Jesus Christ was necessary to bring salvation, so it is necessary to accept Christ as one's personal Savior to be set free from the law of sin and death.

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER NINE.

1. What hindered God from making a perfect "Utopia" in the beginning of the creation?
2. Write an essay on "The Free will of Creation Under God." Use Scripture.
3. What is God's motive in allowing sin to run its evil course? Give Scripture.
4. Name some methods that Satan used to try to stop the Messianic lineage.
5. Why is there no redemption for the fallen angels?
6. Does God ever overlook sin? Explain your reasons with Scripture.
7. What act of God has made possible God's grace and mercy in our behalf? Give Scripture.
8. Give some reasons why the plan of God was in jeopardy .
9. What was the difference between members of the body of Christ and the natural man? Give Scripture.
10. Give eight reasons for the necessity of the crucifixion of the Lord Jesus Christ.
11. What is the difference between the Old Testament sacrifices and Christ's sacrifice of Himself?
12. What is our eternal position before God as believers? Give Scripture.
13. Write an essay on (*Ephesians 2: 14-18*)
14. Write an essay on (*1 Thessalonians 5: 23-24*)
15. Give a short resume of this chapter and what it means to your personal belief.
16. Write an essay on, "Why was the Crucifixion Necessary?".
17. What place do "Good Works" have in the Christian's life?
18. What was the purpose of the law?
19. How does one obtain "The Peace of God"?
20. Write a short essay on "The Conflict of the Ages."

CHAPTER TEN



WHY DO CHRISTIANS SUFFER?

This question of the suffering of believers is very important and affects or reflects our attitude toward the promises of God. You may have some pre-conceived notions about this important question, but for the time being, let us examine the various angles of Divine healing. We are told in the Bible, *"If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you."* (John 15: 7) That certainly is a clear statement, but with very definite restrictions. Let's consider various conditions and restrictions. Make no mistake about it, God does rule and over rule in His sovereign rights. I most certainly believe in Divine healing, but I do not believe in divine healers. When God so wishes to heal, we can depend upon it. However sometimes He has His reasons for withholding His Divine touch, as in the case of Paul and Timothy. Let us first consider the elements with which God has to work. The natural man and his flesh has been totally depraved, and is under the curse of sin.

Q. IS SIN IN THE WORLD RESPONSIBLE FOR HUMAN SUFFERING?

A. THE TOTAL DEPRAVITY OF OUR OLD NATURE.

God had predicted to Adam and Eve that if they ate of the tree of knowledge of good and evil they would die. *"And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat; But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it; for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die."* (Genesis 2: 16-17) However as we read this account, it was not a question of if but rather when, mankind would eat of it. The results of eating of this tree of knowledge was death, both physically and spiritually. Yes, mankind now had a choice between good and evil, but as we know from the Bible that man's choice was evil. As to death, he died spiritually immediately and eventually he died physically. What happened was that the complete race of mankind inherited a totally depraved nature. *"Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of Him that was to come. But not as the offense, so also is the free gift. For if through the offense of one many are dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. And not as it was by one man that sinned, so is the gift; for the judgement was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offenses unto justification. For if by one man's offense death reigned by one, much more they who receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one Jesus Christ. Therefore, as by the offense of one judgement came upon all men to condemnation, even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous."* (Romans 5: 14-19) This passage in the Book of Romans is extremely important, as we examine the question of Christian suffering.

We have been admonished to take up our cross and follow the Lord Jesus Christ. Certainly, Jesus was not free from suffering and the majority of the apostles suffered much for the cause of Christ. Did any of them suffer physically and were not healed? Yes, Paul is a good example of this with his *"Thorn in*

the flesh.” We will deal with that situation later on, but for the time being, realize that Paul had an item of prayer, in which God said “No.” Our main approach to this question at this time is the “Total Depravity” of all mankind. This condition indicates that there are limitations in the physical realm as well as inherited weaknesses. We inherit from our parents many physical limitations and naturally we will have some weaknesses in the flesh. God can and often does overrule these weaknesses in our lives as believers. Usually God will do a miracle of healing and restoration to believers for a particular work that they have to do.

Q. WHAT KIND OF LIFE IS PLEASING TO GOD?

Make no mistake about it, we as Christian leaders or witnesses cannot demand from God our particular request. We can claim the promises from the Word of God, as we meet certain requirements. What are these requirements? Here is a list of some requirements as we make our requests known to God?

1. Abiding in Christ. (John 15: 6-8)

This is a very important pattern of life that we must develop as Christians. Christ, the Creator of all things, was always subjective to the will of God the Father, making sure that the Father's will was done. (Matthew 26: 36-46) (Mark 14: 32-42) (Luke 22: 39-46) God had reserved signs and wonders to awaken Israel out of their unbelief. Recall when John the Baptist sent his disciples to Jesus. “*And John, calling unto him two of his disciples, sent them to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come? Or look we for another?*” They came to Jesus and asked Him these questions and here is how Christ answered them. “*Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard - how the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.*” (Luke 7: 22b) What is significant of Christ's answer? The Lord sent back the report to John the Baptist that there were signs and wonders being manifested, which would occur when the Messiah would come. God will show you signs and wonders in your ministry, especially among the unregenerate as you abide in Christ, seeking to do the will of God the Father, who can rule and overrule, as He chooses.

2. Abiding in the Word of God. (John 15: 7)

One of the hardest lessons to be learned as Christians is to, “*Study to show thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*” (2 Timothy 2: 15) Abiding in the Word of God is very essential as we ask the Lord for certain requests. Unless we abide in the word of God and in the will of God, we often ask amiss. Sometimes, because we are not students of God's Word, we have not because we ask not. (James 4: 3-4) There are also other reasons why we should know the Word of God, for we must ask in faith according to the Word of God. (James 1: 6)

3. The necessity of keeping on being filled by God the Holy Spirit. (Eph 5: 18)

This continual relationship with God is so essential to our prayer life. So often believers attempt to come before our Almighty God, demanding, and claiming particular rights based upon the blood of Calvary. It is true that whatever the request may be, it is always based upon the finished work of the Lord, but we do not super impose our will against the Lord's will. Yes, we come boldly to the throne of grace for mercy and help. “*Let us, therefore, come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.*” (Hebrews 4: 16) By grace, we may ask for mercy and help, according to our need, but we must not demand according to our greed. This continual filling of the Holy Spirit keeps us in sweet fellowship with God. The Lord is mindful of our every need in this life and requires us to walk in the light of His Word. (1 John 1: 7)

4. Grieve not the Holy Spirit. (Eph 4: 30)

This of course is a dangerous situation in which one could find himself as a Christian. This not only removes you from fellowship with the Lord, but also makes you vulnerable for the Holy Spirit to quench His power in your life. (1 Thessalonians 5: 19) Sometimes the final step, under such conditions can lead

to, "The sin unto death." "Know ye not that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are whom ye obey, whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness." (Romans 6: 6) As Christians, we are to live a separated life unto God, and as we study the Bible, we are aware of certain requirements as members of the royal family of God. We are constantly wrestling with the old sin nature which is the totally depraved nature which we inherited from our fore-fathers.

5. Do not forsake assembling together with those of like faith. (Hebrews 10: 25)

As members of the body of Christ, it is very urgent that we assemble together with other believers. We need to admonish each other in the Word of God and also pray for one another. Having a continual battle with our totally depraved nature, we need to uphold one another in prayer. "Is any among you afflicted? Let him pray. Is any merry? Let him sing psalms. Is any sick among you? Let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord; And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him." (James 5: 13-15) This is a portion of Scripture which is often claimed for complete healing of the body by anointing with oil. If you are of such an opinion and you fail to see the sick one healed; upon whom do you blame the failure? One can make many excuses for the failure, but study this portion of Scripture in its context and understand the conclusion. "Confess your faults one to another and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual, fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much." (James 5: 16) This gathering together is more than merely physical healing, but rather restoration of fellowship with one another and in the Lord. The one that may need the greatest healing is that one who is sick spiritually.

Q. DOES GOD ALLOW SUFFERING FOR REASONS NOT KNOWN TO US?

B. THE GLORY OF GOD.

Some outstanding faithful believers are sometimes called to suffer without the manifestation of the healing power. Why does God allow such conditions among His own? One thing that we must always remember; "And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose." (Romans 8: 28) This is a clear statement from God Almighty, and all things do work together for the good of God's own, but all things are not always good! "For now we see in a mirror, darkly; but then, face to face; now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known." (1 Corinthians 13: 12)

Paul the apostle with his thorn in the flesh, said, "For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And He said unto me, My grace is sufficient for thee; for my strength is made perfect in weakness. Most gladly, therefore, will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me. Therefore, I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake; for when I am weak, then am I strong." (2 Corinthians 12: 8-10) This is an amazing situation that a believer can be in, for the glory of God! Those that would say that all diseases and sicknesses are from the devil, need to study what the Word of God says.

Sometimes the Lord allows the devil to do his thing in the lives of God's children, testing their faithfulness to the Lord. Take for instance, the case of Job. Although Job had great losses of family and possessions, through the devil, yet he remained faithful to God. Satan was and always will be under the sovereignty of God, and we can praise God for His protecting power over His own. Supernaturally we, as children of God are not only protected within by God the Holy Spirit, but we also have a hedge about our lives as in the case of Job. (Job 1: 10) After all that Job went through he could still say, "Though He slay me, yet will I trust Him:" (Job 13: 15a) This Book of Job should be a great consolation to those who are afflicted. May we always remember that God does not always take away the natural weaknesses, but regardless of the circumstances, God's children are under God's protection. Nothing is too hard for the Lord, but His ways are often past our understanding or finding out. Job had tremendous losses, BUT GOD in His marvelous ways, doubled the wealth of Job after the trials were over. May I remind you, "That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ:" (1 Peter 1: 7) No one enjoys these trials that come into our lives, nevertheless they will come. May we take courage in the

Lord, knowing that God's grace is sufficient and though we are weak in ourselves, we are made strong in the Lord.

Q. HOW DO CHRISTIANS GROW SPIRITUALLY?

C. LEARNING TO BECOME STRONG IN THE LORD.

The Christian life is a continuation of gaining knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ, and growing in the nurture and admonition from God's Word. Our graduation as Christians will take place when we get our glorified bodies, when the Rapture takes place. Until then, we keep on studying God's Word so that we grow and become mature in the Christian walk. It is not a matter of natural age, but supernatural development. Some Christians never grow and are constantly living on the milk of God's Word, rather than being able to feast upon the meat of God's Word.

Q. WHY DO SOME CHRISTIANS NEVER GROW SPIRITUALLY?

There are many reasons why some Christians never grow in the Christian life, here are some of them:

1. They are conformed to this world system or tribal customs. (*Romans 12: 2*)
2. They are living in a continual life of sin. (*Romans 6: 1-2*) (*1 Corinthians 3: 16-18*)
3. They do not study the Bible daily. (*2 Timothy 2: 15*)
4. Their time is spent in gossip and with itching ears. (*2 Timothy 2: 16*)
(*2 Timothy 4: 3*)
5. They fail to confess their sins. (*1 John 1: 9*)
6. They fail to assemble together with other believers. (*Hebrews 10: 25*)
7. They are envious and spiteful with fellow Christians. (*Hebrews 10: 22-24*)
8. They continually sin with the possibility of sin unto removal by an early death. (*Romans 6: 12-16*)
(*1 Corinthians 11: 17-30*)
9. There are babes in Christ who are not fed the deep things of the Bible. (*1 Corinthians 3: 1-3*)

CONCLUSION

As we conclude this quick survey as to ways and means to become strong in the Lord, regardless of circumstances, may we take a warning from the Word of God. God cannot be mocked by individual vanity, pride, selfishness or ungodly acts. There are too many in this world who have a religion but not a relationship. They do not distinguish between welfare and worship. "*For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, truce breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good, traitors, heady, high minded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: from such turn away.*" (*2 Timothy 3: 2-5*) This is primarily referring to the unregenerate and ungodly, but some of these traits can be found among believers. There are so many pitfalls that the Christians are exposed to and we need to constantly depend upon the guidance of God the Holy Spirit as He guides us into all truth. We are told, "*Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the power of His might.*" (*Ephesians 6: 10*) Though trials and disappointments surround you, always remember that His loving arms are about you, and He will never leave you nor forsake you. Yes, you may suffer in this present life as a Christian, but our "Faith" and our "Rest" is in the Lord who understands. He will continually comfort you through His Word in the power of God the Holy Spirit.

We are not promised deliverance from all of our ailments but we are promised comfort of soul in spite of our ailments. Being a Christian, you have God the Holy Spirit within you forever no matter what sickness or weakness you may have. Do not listen to those false prophets who try to convince you that if you are sick or weak, there is a demon within you. It is absolutely impossible for those who have been born again of the Holy Spirit, to be demon possessed at the same time. Christians are fully identified with Him, who lives within forever and ever. (*1 Corinthians 12: 13*) God the Holy Spirit who dwells within you would NEVER tolerate a demon to dwell side by side in your life with Him!

The good shepherd will look after each of us as we follow Him, and listen to His voice through the Holy Scriptures. Rest assured, as you continue in the Word of God, the Lord will be your ever present help. As these bodies get old and weak, we understand that there will be ailments of various sorts. Christ has not promised physical health if a person becomes a believer. Some Christians are specifically given good health for the furthering of the Gospel. But regardless of the physical being that each of us may enjoy, it is all by the grace of God. If you are weak in the flesh, the Word of God tells us that in our weakness we are made strong in the Lord. Regardless of our health, we are totally dependent upon the Lord and as we read, "*Trust in the Lord with all thine heart, and lean not unto thine own understanding.*" (*Proverbs 3: 5*)

Q. WHAT ARE SOME OF THE REASONS WHY CHRISTIANS SUFFER?

There are various reasons why Christians suffer and in closing this chapter may I just simply list some of the reasons, according to the Word of God.

1. Some Christians have a naturally weak physique, through inheritance or accidents. (*Psalm 51: 5*)
2. The chastening of the Lord because of His great love toward you. (*Proverbs 3: 11-12*)
3. The total depravity of the physical nature. (*Romans 3: 23*)
4. Suffering saints with the purpose of glorifying the Lord. (*2 Corinthians 12: 8-10*)
5. Unconfessed sin. (*1 John 1: 6-10*)
6. Partaking of the Lord's supper unworthily. (*1 Corinthians 11: 27-32*)
7. Being conformed to this world's system. (*Romans 12: 2*)
8. Walking out of fellowship with the Lord. (*1 John 1: 7*)
9. Practicing and living by the fruit of the flesh, rather than the fruit of the Spirit. (*Gal 5: 16-26*)
10. Discord among the brethren. (*Proverbs 6: 14-19*)
11. Refusing to do the perfect will of God in the believers life. (*Romans 12: 2*)
12. Neglecting to study the Bible. (*2 Timothy 2: 15*)
13. Neglecting to fellowship with those of like faith. (*1 John 1: 7*)
14. Some suffering among faithful believers is for the glory of God and a witness to the world to the saving grace of our loving Lord. (*2 Corinthians 12: 5-10*)

As I close this short observation on suffering saints, may I just remind you to search out the Bible for examples of God's people and how they suffered for the Lord. Read (*2 Corinthians 11: 16-33*) Look at how Joseph was tested as a slave. Look at how Jacob wrestled with the angel of the Lord, who finally blessed him but the sinew in Jacob's thigh shrank. Jacob named the place Peniel, "*And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel; for I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved.*" (*Genesis 32: 30*) In

times past, many of God's saints spent much time in prisons, tortured, thrown to the lions, burned at the stake, and others barely existing, living in caves and dens as they served the Lord.

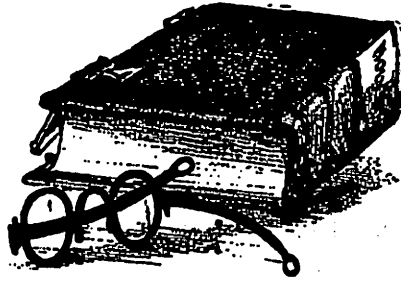
Be aware of the pitfalls of being out of fellowship with the Lord. We do not want our good works to be as "wood, hay, or stubble" before the Lord. God has granted us the Holy Spirit to guide us into ALL truth, but we must be wholly yielded to the Lord and aware of that inward voice, that is available, as we search out the Scriptures.

In closing, may we not judge those that suffer. God alone knows the reasons. They may suffer because of disobedience to Him, or to show forth His glory and honor. God's grace is sufficient, if God allows some saints to suffer for His glory and honor. Please remember that sicknesses and weaknesses in the flesh among believers does not mean that they are possessed by demons. If God the Holy Spirit dwells within, and provides a new birth, no demon can possess that saint of God. The demons can harass believers but they cannot possess believers. *"What shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us. For I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creation, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus, our Lord."* (Romans 8: 35-39) We as Christians can expect to suffer in this present world. We must remember that we are so-journeymen and pilgrims in this present world. We have already been called out from this world and are new creatures in Christ Jesus.

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER TEN.

1. Give some Biblical reasons why Christians suffer during this present life. Give Scripture.
2. Explain (*John 15: 7*)
3. Explain the term "TOTALLY DEPRAVED."
4. Explain (*Romans 5: 14-19*)
5. Write a thesis of "THE THORN IN THE FLESH" (*2 Corinthians 12: 6-10*)
6. What is involved as one acquires the position of "Abiding In Christ"?
7. What is involved as one "Abides In the Word of God"?
8. Why is it necessary the keep on being filled by God the Holy Spirit?
(*Ephesians 5: 18*)
9. Name several ways in which a Christian can grieve God the Holy Spirit.
10. Explain (*Hebrews 10: 25*)
11. Explain (*James 5: 13-15*)
12. Explain (*James 5: 16*)
13. Explain (*Romans 8: 28*)
14. Give examples of Believers suffering for the glory of God.
15. Write a short paper on "THE SUFFERING OF JOB."
16. Name some reasons why believers do not grow in the Christian life.
17. Name some of the ways in which the Bible teaches us about sin and how to avoid a life of sin.
18. Can anything separate us from the love of God?
19. Explain (*Romans 8: 35-39*)
20. When we see a Christian suffering, what should our attitude be toward him? How can we help fellow believers who are suffering?
21. Write an essay on "Chastening" (*Hebrews 12: 11*)

CHAPTER ELEVEN



WHY ARE THERE TWO RESURRECTIONS?

You will often hear within the creeds of some denominations their statement of a "general resurrection." This of course is very misleading and is NOT based upon the teaching of the Bible. For this reason I want to discuss and uphold the Biblical teachings about resurrection. Yes, there will be a resurrection of every human being that has ever lived upon the face of the earth. Those unborn children which are murdered and slaughter by the ungodly will have a resurrected body.

Christ has declared, "Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live. And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believeth thou this?" (John 11: 25-26) I want you to give very close attention to three aspects of the resurrection. First, there will be two different destinations for everyone raised from the dead; second, God has included two resurrections in His eternal plans; third, the consequence and free choice demands a difference in the two resurrections.

Q. WHERE WILL RESURRECTED PEOPLE GO?

A. THEIR DESTINATIONS ARE DIFFERENT.

The two separate resurrections lead to two separate destinations. As God has separated the Holy angels from the fallen angels, so God is in the process of separating mankind with respect to their exercise of their freedom of choice. There will be a day when the Lord will cause all the dead of all times to rise up and stand before that Great Judge, the Lord Jesus Christ. Some will be given everlasting life and some will be given an everlasting, living death. The 24 elders in the heavenlies will proclaim, "Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned. And the nations were angry; and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldst give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and shouldst destroy them which destroy the earth." (Revelation 11: 17-18) This is very significant and revealing because of both judgements upon the ungodly and the rewards for those saint who are faithful. Let us first of all consider those purchased with the precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ, who is the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world.

Q. WHO WILL BE RESURRECTED FIRST?

THE FIRST RESURRECTION.

The Word of God gives us the clues about the two resurrections and we don't need to be confused about it. Note what the Word of God says, "Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years." (Revelation 20: 6) Now this is a direct statement from God the Holy Spirit and it has a definite time period when it will happen. This first resurrection deals with all of the Old Testament saint, the New Testament saints and the Tribulation saints. Death has reigned from Adam until

the last human being will be born. Perhaps it would be good to list these that will take part in the first resurrection.

1. Christ the first fruits of the first resurrection. (*1 Corinthians 15: 20- 22*)
2. The Rapture of all the saints of the Old Testament and the New Testament. (*John 14: 1-6*); (*1 Thessalonians 4: 13-18*); (*1 Corinthians 15 :51-57*)
3. The Tribulation saints with the seal of Jehovah. (*Rev 14: 1-5*); (*Revelation 7: 3-17*); (*Rev 20: 5*)

CHRIST THE FIRST FRUITS.

The resurrection from the dead, by the Eternal Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ gives us a guarantee of the power of God to raise from the dead. Christ who is the everlasting Son of God demonstrated this power many times during His 3 years of earthly ministry. Perhaps the outstanding demonstration was "The raising of Lazarus." There were sufficient eye witnesses, having placed Lazarus in the tomb. Martha and other faithful New Testament saints knew that Lazarus would rise again. "*Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. Martha saith unto Him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this? She saith unto Him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.*" (*John 11: 23-27*) The Old and New Testament saints were looking forward to that first resurrection and that is why they buried their dead rather than cremating their dead.

In the Old Testament God's people made offerings of the first fruits of the harvest, so Christ has become the first fruits of all those who have "by faith" sacrificed, believing in Almighty God that He would provide the supreme sacrifice. (*Exod 23: 16-19*); (*Exod 34: 22-26*); (*Lev 2: 12-14*); (*Lev 23: 10-14*) These feasts were to be offered unto the Lord, by faith with the expectation of the sacrifice and resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ, the Messiah.

The Lord expects us to be conformed to His first born of the resurrected life. "*For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the first-born among many brethren.*" (*Romans 8: 29*) Christ as the Incarnate and Eternal Son of God has the priority of all things created. We are redeemed by the precious blood of the Lord as God the Father's supreme gift to those who believe. "*Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver and gold, from your vain manner of life received by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot, who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you.*" (*1 Peter 1: 18-20*) The next statement is of great importance and reveals the Eternal Incarnate Son of God as being raised from the dead, becoming the first fruits of the resurrection with a special glorified body. "*Who by Him do believe in God, who raised Him up from the dead and gave Him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God. Seeing that ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently, being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the Word of GOD, which liveth and abideth forever.*" (*1 Peter 1: 20--23*) Christ being the first fruits of those from the dead, necessitates others to follow in His likeness. "*Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is."* (*1 John 3: 2*)

Q. HOW ARE THE RAPTURE AND THE FIRST RESURRECTION RELATED?

That moment when He appears in the clouds, and that trumpet sounds will be the zero hour for the greatest "Air Lift" of all times! We call it the Rapture of the saints of God. It will be the sequence of Christ resurrecting all saints from the dead, and physically removing all living saints from the earth.

THE RAPTURE OF THE SAINTS

This great Rapture can happen at any moment, calling all the living saint into their heavenly realm

changed into their glorified bodies. It will give all the saints of all past ages their long awaited glorified bodies for all eternity. This will NOT be a general resurrection as some religious groups proclaim, but will be known as the "**First Resurrection**" as recorded in the Bible. "*Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years.*" (Revelation 20: 6) This Rapture must take place before the millennium can begin, as the saints of all ages prior to this Rapture shall rule and reign with Christ during the thousand years. "*And hast made us unto our God a kingdom of priests, and we shall reign on earth.*" (Revelation 5: 10) This must be thoroughly understood as the student of the Bible reviews the over all plan of God. Many of the difficult Bible questions can be better understood, as one studies the following:

1. The character of God,
2. The Plan of God,
3. The Purpose of God,
4. The Provision of God.

The Rapture of the saints is another indication of God's great love toward all who put their trust in Him. "*But God, who is rich in mercy, for His great love with which He loved us, even when we were dead in sins, hath made us alive together with Christ (by grace ye are saved), and hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus; That in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us through Christ Jesus.*" (Ephesians 2: 4-7) Since time is not an element in God's economy, Christ as the first fruits is a guarantee that we shall be raised up in like manner, never ever to sin again in a glorified body.

The Word of God shows that this great "Air Lift" of the saints of God will take place prior to the tribulation. The Bible teaches the pre-tribulation of the Rapture of the saints. If I had no other reason for this truth than the following doctrine, it would be sufficient evidence for me. What is it? It is the fact that only God the Father knows when the rapture will take place. "*But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but My Father only.*" (Matt 24: 36) So, those who would set a-time period in the middle of the tribulation or at the end of the tribulation are absolutely wrong because that does set a date for the coming of the Lord. The imminent return of the Lord, necessitates our preparedness for the Rapture to take place.

One of the most outstanding statements referring to the coming of the Lord is by the Eternal Son of God. This tremendous statement is only recorded in the Gospel of John, which was written many years after the three Gospels called the "Synoptic." God the Holy Spirit separated the Gospel of John from the other three, for the key note of (John 20: 31) "*But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through His name.*" The Synoptic Gospels were dictated by the Holy Spirit, to give a cross section of the life of Christ as being presented to Israel as their Messiah.

The Gospel of John reveals Christ in the following manner:

1. The Giver of life (John 5: 24); (John 1: 4)
2. The Proclaimer of the New Birth. (John 3: 3-7)
3. The Identification with God the Holy Spirit. (John 14: 16-17)
4. The declaration of God's individual love toward mankind. (John 3: 16)
5. The Messiah's purpose in coming into this world. (John 3: 17)
6. A clear statement of being the resurrection and the life. (John 11: 25-26)
7. The Eternal Son and the Creator of all things. (John 1: 1-3)
8. The two resurrections. (John 5: 28-29)
9. Christ the Supreme Judge. (John 5: 22)

10. The Forgiver of sins. (*John 8: 10-11*)
11. Christ the Good Shepherd. (*John 10: 11*)
12. Eternal Security proclaimed. (*John 10: 25-30*)
13. The Rapture of the saints before the Millennium. (*John 14: 1-6*)
14. The Triune God clearly stated. (*John 15: 26*)
15. The Sender of God the Holy Spirit. (*John 16: 7-11*)
16. A Tremendous prayer of intercession for the saints to the Father. (*John 17: 1-26*)
17. The Provider in His glorified body. (*John 21: 12-14*)

The Rapture of the saints is the very important revelation by the Holy Spirit, only found in the Gospel of John. Make no mistake about this clear statement that the saints of God will be "Caught Up" to be where the Lord has been for some two thousand years. He has been preparing places for each of the saints in the Mansions of God the Father. This will alleviate our being "Caught In" that coming great tribulation. (*1 Thess 1: 10*) "Let not your heart be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in me. In My Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you, I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also." (*John 14: 1-3*) We know according to the Bible that Christ ascended into Heaven, returning to His eternal throne, and this statement from the Holy Spirit relates to that heavenly home with the Lord. This Scripture is again verified by the Holy Spirit to the believers. "For this we say unto you by the Word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not precede them who are asleep. For the Lord Himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God; and the dead in Christ shall rise first; Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord." (*1 Thessalonians 4: 15-17*) Another very important portion of Scripture concerning this "Air Lift" is as follows: "Behold I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed." (*1 Corinthians 15: 51-52*)

God will remove the Old Testament and the New Testament believers, who have died in Christ Jesus, giving them their glorified bodies, and those believers in Christ who are alive at the Lord's coming (In the air) shall be changed into their glorified bodies. Here are 4 Bible teachings about the chronology of the Rapture, the Tribulation, the Millennium, and the Battle of Armageddon:

1. The coming of the Lord is God the Father's secret and no one can set a date as to this great event, except God the Father. (*Matthew 24: 36*)
 2. The zero hour for the Tribulation cannot begin until we are in heaven witnessing the Lamb of God receiving the sealed scroll from God the Father. (*Revelation 5: 1-10*)
 3. The Battle of Armageddon cannot take place until after the tribulation. (*Matthew 24: 16-30*); (*Revelation 19: 11-21*)
 4. The Thousand Year kingdom of the Lord shall begin after the battle of Armageddon, when the saints return with the Lord to reign with Him during the Millennium. (*Rev 5: 10*)
- Q. WILL THERE BE OTHER BELIEVERS IN THE FIRST RESURRECTION?

THE RESURRECTION OF THE TRIBULATION SAINTS.

The first resurrection is not completed with the raising of the Old Testament and the New Testament saints but will include the Tribulation Saints, who will become martyrs during the tribulation. There is ample proof of this truth in the Bible, so let us mention some verifications to this truth. *"After this I beheld and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and peoples, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands, and cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our God who sitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.....And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. and he said unto me, These are they who came out of the great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb."* (Revelation 7: 9-14) This great throng will also include the majority of the 144,000 witnesses which God will select to witness for Him, during the great tribulation. (Revelation 7: 4-8); (Revelation 14: 1-5) All of these will receive their glorified bodies as part of the first resurrection.

THE RESURRECTION OF THE MILLENNIAL SAINTS.

There is still another group that must experience this first resurrection and they are those, in Christ, who die during the thousand year reign of Christ upon this present earth. Even though nature will be restored during the Millennium, there still will be those who die during that thousand year reign of Christ. Both the Old Testament saints, the New Testament saints and the Tribulation saints will rule and reign with Christ (Revelation 5: 10), there will be a final group of believers who will be saved during the Kingdom age of righteousness. The kingdom teachings of righteousness will be taught in all the schools and assemblies and many will believe. *"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years."* (Revelation 20: 6) Please note the statement of "the second death." It will be the punishment given to all who are not found listed in the Book of Life. It will apply to all who make up the sum total of the second resurrection. The Lord will send His angels forth throughout the whole world and gather His elect from every part of this world before the second resurrection takes place. *"And He shall send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."* (Matthew 24: 31) All of God's elect will be safely gathered and receive their glorified bodies before the second resurrection, the resurrection and judgement of the ungodly of all ages. *"And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hades delivered up the dead that were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire."* (Revelation 20: 11-15)

Q. WHO WILL BE RAISED IN THE SECOND RESURRECTION?

THE SECOND RESURRECTION

These are the rest of the dead which will have their part in the second resurrection, and then in the second death. It will become an eternal living death and there will be no escape, whatsoever! (Hebrews 2: 3) This second resurrecting will be all inclusive of every ungodly person that ever lived upon the face of the earth. God's Word reminds me of the continual abiding wrath upon these ungodly human beings forever and ever! *"He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him."* (John 3: 36) The second resurrection will culminate in a separation from the love of God forever and ever. The wrath of God will continually abide upon the ungodly forever and ever! This is the destination of the ungodly and there will be no second chance, if they were to repent from their evil ways. Only in life did they have a chance to accept God's gift. This second resurrection will be for the second living death and it will be forever and ever.

They will be physically raised from the dead, however and wherever they died. All tongues, nations

and religions where Christ was rejected shall be raised and brought before "The Great White Throne." to be judged according to their own good works as compared to God's requirements. "*And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hades delivered up the dead that were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." (Revelation 20: 11-15) These will all be gathered for judgement after the second resurrection and terrible will be their final destination, the lake of fire, forever and ever, the second death!*

Since Christ as the Lamb of God has paid the debt of the sins of the whole world, the issue is no longer, "The Sin Question" but rather "The Son Question." The rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ is the unpardonable sin of all ages. Christ Himself has said, "*I am the way, the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the Father but by me." (John 14: 6) Christ also said. "*I am the resurrection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live. And whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believeth thou this?*" (John 11: 25-26) Certainly, God's Word is clear enough for all to understand, whatever language we speak! This second death is an eternal living death and should be avoided. "*Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved .*" (Acts 16: 31)*

Q. WHY WILL THERE BE A SECOND RESURRECTION TO SEPARATION?

B. GOD'S PLAN OF ALL AGES REQUIRES IT.

I again refer back to the eternal plan of God. Both the angels and human beings have been given the "freedom of choice," and with it, one must accept the consequences. The fallen angels are awaiting their final judgement, being cast into the eternal lake of fire. (Revelation 20: 10,14) In God's immutable plan, God has an absolute "Utopia" declared, where sin and unrighteousness will be banned forever and ever. (Daniel 9: 24) Sin and all evil will have run it's course when that final day arrives. It is a glorious revelation to understand the great and mighty things to come.

The Triune God has chosen this immutable plan to deal with all potential evil, and to bring into existence a glorified new creation. Once that cup of iniquity is filled to capacity, the final judgement will fall upon it completely, casting the sum total of evil into the eternal lake of fire. God's Word reminds us, "*He that is unjust, let him be unjust still; and he that is filthy, let him be filthy still; and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still; and he that is holy, let him be holy still.*" (Revelation 22: 11) God's plan of all ages will separate the two groups forever and ever, and they will never meet again. The Lord Jesus Christ came to justify, and He will return to glorify His own, and finally to judge the wicked. "*And, behold I come quickly, and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his works shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. Blessed are they that wash their robes, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. For outside are dogs, and sorcerers, and fornicators, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie.*" (Revelation 22: 12-15)

This great separation between God's holiness and satanic wickedness will be forever and ever, and they will never meet again. God has purposely allowed sin to run its course so that He could judge it once and forever. "*O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, who giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmovable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord." (1 Corinthians 15: 55-58) The struggle with the ungodly and wicked must continue, as we make full use of the armor of God. (Ephesians 6: 10-20) God has provided every believer with God the Holy Spirit to contend against the evil forces. May we allow Him to guide and direct us through this life by the Word of God. "*Be not deceived, God is not mocked, for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. And let us not be weary in well doing; for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.*" (Galatians 6: 7-9) We need not fear that God's plans will change, for they have been established in ages past and will never have to be*

altered. God has made every provision for both the angelic hosts and every human being, ever to be born. His ways are eternal and also past our understanding with our finite minds. One day we shall know as we are known. *"For now we see in a mirror, darkly; but then, face to face; now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known."* (1 Corinthians 13: 12) The Lord, through God the Holy Spirit has given us ample proofs of the eternal plan of the Triune God, but we must search out the Scriptures, so that we can enter into our "Faith Rest." (Hebrews 4: 1); (Hebrews 4: 9-11)

God's perfect plan will be accomplished according to God's schedule. There will be no need of a change in God's plans for God is immutable and omniscient. You and I, as members of "The Royal Family of God," can have confidence and assurance about the future, as we keep in sweet fellowship with the Triune God who knows the future. However, those who are outside the Royal Family of God must suffer the consequences of their wrong choices. The natural man wants to do his own thing, rather than accept God's perfect plan. The natural man thinks he knows best, and rejects God's "Faith Rest." We have ample evidence in the Bible that God's way is always the best way!

Q. WHO CAN CHOOSE WHICH RESURRECTION TO BE A PART OF?

C. THE CONSEQUENCE OF CHOICE DEMANDS IT.

As we study the difference in these two resurrections, we must be aware of God's provision and man's decision. *"There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death."* (Proverbs 14: 12) God has created man as a free mortal agent, with the choice of accepting or rejecting God's perfect will for his life. If a person wishes to "Do his own thing," he can personally make such a choice but if he does, he must suffer the consequences. *"The Lord is not slack concerning His promises, as some men count slackness, but is long-suffering, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance."* (2 Peter 3: 9) God never intended to have one human being destined to go into the lake of fire, but with the freedom of choice every individual soul must make his or her choice. One exception to that rule of God is a child or infant or individual who is incapable of knowing right from wrong. God has made provision for those who die before they arrive at the age of accountability, they will be saved from the wrath to come. The Lord Jesus Christ paid the debt of the sins of the whole world, therefore it is not the sin question at stake, but rather the Son question. *"What will you do with Jesus? Neutral you cannot be, someday you will be asking, What will He do with me?"*

May I remind you that "you reap whatsoever you sow!" As Christians we must give an account before the Judgement Seat of Christ (2 Cor 5: 10), and if you are a non-believer in Christ as the Eternal Son of God, you will stand before "The Great White Throne" (Revelation 20: 11-15), and bow before the Son of God, acknowledging Him as the Son of God (Philippians 2: 9-11).

As we close this study, concerning the two separate resurrections, may we seek to know God's perfect will for our lives. This can only be accomplished as we allow God to have full control of our lives, with complete dedication and possession. *"I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. and be not conformed to this world, but transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God."* (Romans 12: 1-2)

THE CHRISTIAN'S CHOICE

We must all realize, that whether a Christian or a non-Christian, the choice is ours to make! The Christian has part in the first resurrection, and the non-Christian will have his or her part in the second resurrection. The choice is ours! Which will it be? Those of the first resurrection must give an account of what they have faithfully done upon this earth. Their judgement is not for a penalty, but rather for a reward. All those of the first resurrection must appear before "The Judgement Seat of Christ" and be judged according to their faithfulness to God during their earthly life. Christians can live a selfish life, pleasing themselves, but must also suffer the loss of rewards before the judgement seat of Christ. (1 Corinthians 3: 9-15) If the Christian defiles his body in any way, he must suffer the eternal loss of special blessings. *"but he himself shall be saved, yet as by fire."* (1 Corinthians 3: 15b) May we remind ourselves, as Christians, *"Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?"* 1 Corinthians 3: 16) Christian, whoever you are and wherever you may be, keep in fellowship

with the Lord, walking in the light of the Word of God! *"This, then, is the message which we have heard of Him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in Him is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth; But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ, His Son, cleanseth us from all sin." (1 John 1: 5-7) It is so important that we continually use (1 John 1: 9), not just with lip service, but rather with heart service, and with true convictions from the Holy Spirit. As we walk in the Holy Spirit, being led by the Holy Spirit, then we can experience sweet fellowship with God and with one another.*

THE NON-CHRISTIAN'S CHOICE

The "Status Quo" of every soul born into this present life is totally depraved and God's Word makes the clear and concise statement, *"For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God."* (Romans 3: 23) The penalty of such a condition is eternal living death! When one rejects the escape route from this eternal living death, they through God's provision of His Eternal Son, then the consequences will be activated, in and through the second resurrection. *"How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation, which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard Him."* (Hebrews 2: 3) If you or any of your family or friends are non-Christians, their destination for eternity is the lake of fire, where there will be eternal torment with the wrath of God forever and ever. Yes, God will allow you to do your own thing, and defy God's provision, but you will be separated from the Triune God and their marvelous grace, forever and ever. *"For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness. Because that which may be known of God is manifested in them; for God hath shown it unto them. For the invisible things of Him from creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse; Because, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like corruptible man, and birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore, God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies between themselves, who exchanged the truth of God for a lie, and worshiped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed forever and ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections; for even their women did exchange the natural use for that which is against nature; And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the women, burned in their lust one toward another, men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompense of their error which was fitting."* (Romans 1: 18-27)

Death in this present life is not something that one looks forward to, or enjoys when it happens to our loved ones, but the second death will continually be experienced by the non-Christians forever and ever. It will be a continual living death, never to escape from the horror of it. That is going to be an eternal experience to all of those outside of Christ. There will be no love available, but hatred shall reign forever. There will be a separation from God, living with hell and death throughout eternity to come.

God has made the provision and every non-believer must make the decision! Today is the day of salvation and *"Neither is there salvation in any other; for there is no other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved."* (Acts 4: 12) It is certainly not a light thing to be separated forever from our Creator! But we are told in the Scripture, *"Enter in at the narrow gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be who go in that way. Because narrow is the gate, and hard is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves." (Matthew 7: 13-15)*

We have discussed why two resurrections are necessary, for their destinations are vastly different. We who have put our trust in the Lord Jesus Christ, *"We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death."* (1 John 3: 14) God has in His marvelous plan for all ages, included us in these plans, manifesting His love toward all who would believe. *"In this was manifested the love of God toward us, that God sent His only begotten Son into the world, that we might live through Him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that He loved us, and sent His Son to be the propitiation for our sins."* (1 John 4: 9-10) God's Divine love through God the

Holy Spirit must flow in and through our lives. This gives us God's perfect love and also gives us boldness to come to God the Father, through Christ, His Eternal Son. *"Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgement, because as He is, so are we in this world."* (1 John 4: 17) Since we have a separate resurrection promised to us who believe, let us also live a separated Christian life for the praise and glory of our precious Savior, Lord and Master. *"Wherefore, come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty."* (2 Corinthians 6: 17-18)

CONCLUSION

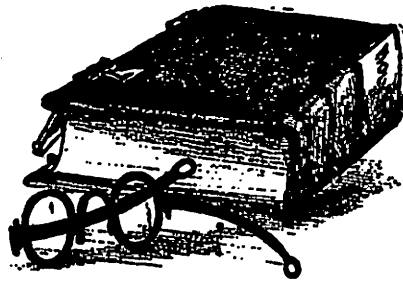
Because we have freedom of choice in life, we must always be aware of the consequences of the choices we make. There will always be a conflict between the human view point and the Divine viewpoint in this present life. The only way that one can know the Divine viewpoint is through God the Holy Spirit. Unless you are born of the Spirit, and walking in the Spirit, you will never know the Divine viewpoint. The character of the Christian is manifest through the fruit of the Spirit. *"For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth, proving what is acceptable unto the Lord."* (Ephesians 5: 9-10)

God has separated these two resurrections for a specific purpose. The first resurrection will be filled with blessings and the second resurrection will be filled with the wrath of God. All mankind is without excuse, and can only blame themselves if they reject Christ as their personal Savior. We who have trusted the Lord Jesus Christ for the remission of our sins have hope. Those of us who have been born by God the Holy Spirit can say with Paul, *"For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith."* (Galatians 5: 5) God expects us to be fruitful saints as we journey through this life. We shall look upon the Lord, face to face and be like Him with a glorified body! (1 John 3: 1-3) May we continually let the beauty of Jesus be seen in us, manifesting the fruit of the Holy Spirit. *"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, self-control; against such there is no law. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts. If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit."* (Galatians 5: 22-25)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER ELEVEN.

1. Explain why the statement "GENERAL RESURRECTION" is not based upon the Bible teachings.
2. Write briefly on (*John 11: 23-27*)
3. Differentiate between the coming two judgements. (*2 Corinthians 5: 10*); and (*Revelation 11: 17-18*); (*Revelation 20: 11-15*)
4. Who are included in the "First Resurrection"?
5. Explain (*1 Corinthians 15 :20-22*)
6. Explain (*1 Peter 1: 20-23*)
7. Write on (*John 14: 1-6*)
8. What is so important with the statement, "The Rapture of the Saints"?
9. Give a brief statement on the following, "The Character of God," "The Plan of God," "The Purpose of God," "The Provision of God."
10. Give as many differences that you can give between the Synoptic Gospels, (*Matthew, Mark, and Luke*) and the *Gospel of John*. Scripture.
11. Explain the difference between being, "Caught Up," and "Caught In."
12. Give the important reasons why the Rapture will occur "Pre-Tribulation."
13. Who are included in the 2nd. resurrection? Scripture.
14. Write briefly on , "God's Plan of All Ages."
15. Explain (*1 Corinthians 15: 55-58*)
16. Why does the rejection of Christ bring terrible consequences?
17. What is the difference between the Christians and the non-Christians?
18. Explain (*Romans 1: 18-27*)
19. Explain (*Matthew 7: 13-15*)
20. Why should we as Christians live a separated life in this present world?
21. Write an essay on (*Galatians 5: 22-25*)

CHAPTER TWELVE



WHY DOES GOD HAVE TO DESTROY THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH?

It was a little confusing at first to understand the world wide flood and why it was necessary, BUT GOD had a reason for it. God has good reasons for everything He does. The saints of God will get to see the present heavens before God destroys them. That will help us understand a little of eternity past, and we will be able to compare it with eternity of the future. Let us consider three important reasons for the total destruction of the heavens and the earth.

Q. WHAT HAS SIN DONE TO CREATION?

A. THE CONTAMINATION OF SIN HAS OCCURRED.

God wants a fresh and new creation, in every realm where sin has contaminated His creative works. God has clearly stated how sin entered both the heavens and the earth. God's characteristics are free from every taint of sin, and He desires a perfect and absolute holy environment. In God's future eternity there will be no possibility of sin, as the sum total of sin, death, and hell will be cast into the lake of fire. God is allowing sin to run its wicked course, having judged total sin at the cross. All creation is under the curse of sin and only God can restore His holiness by removing sin once and forever.

"The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. They are corrupt, they have done abominable works, there is none that doeth good. The Lord looked down from heaven upon the children of men, to see if there were any that did understand, and seek God. They are all gone aside, they are all together become filthy; there is none that doeth good, no, not one." (Psalm 14: 1-3) Apart from the work of God in your heart and my heart, we all are totally depraved. That is why it is necessary for God to make a way of escape from the judgement of sin. This cost God the Father His very own Eternal Son to bring salvation to those who would believe. Note what Christ Himself said, *"Take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. For like a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. Watch ye, therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man."* (Luke 21: 34-36)

Perhaps the best portion of the Scriptures to describe the total depravity of man as well as this sin cursed universe, would be from the Book of Romans. The Jewish race thought themselves above all other nations and took great pride in their religious ceremonies, but before God there is nothing that can be compared to the righteous demands of the Triune God. Here is what the Word of God has to say. *"What then? Are we better than they? No, in no way; for we have before proved both Jews and Greeks, that they are all under sin: As it is written, There is none righteous, no, not one: There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepulcher; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips; Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness. Their feet are swift to shed blood; Destruction and misery are in their ways; And the way of peace have they not known. There is no fear of God before their eyes. Now we know that whatsoever*

things the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God." (Romans 3: 9-19)

This certainly places every human being under condemnation before our Holy God. Apart from Almighty God's undertaking in our behalf, we would all be destroyed. We have already studied about the contamination of heaven by one third of the angels, who rebelled against God and became demons. Therefore, both the old heaven and this old earth must be destroyed. It will make room for the new heavens and the new earth. When God creates all things new, sin will have run its complete course and God will separate this old contaminated world forever from the holiness of God. *"For the earnest expectation of the creation waiteth for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the creation was made subject to vanity, not willingly but by reason of Him who hath subjected the same in hope. Because the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now."* (Romans 8: 19-22) This is a clear case of a total contamination of God's creation. God's perfection to come will correct all of this with "The New Heavens and the New Earth." The total amount of sin was judged at the cross and condemned forever, and will be cast into the lake of fire with death and hell. This sum total of evil will remain there forever.

There is another phase of this sin question and that will better the aspirations of both the angels and humans. The holy angels in heaven are waiting for that great day when the kingdoms of this world shall become the kingdom of God. (Rev 11: 15) We also who have been born of God the Holy Spirit, await that great day when we receive our glorified bodies, like unto that of our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 John 3: 1-3) *"And not only they, but ourselves also, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, that is, the redemption of our body."* (Romans 8: 23) The whole realm of God is waiting for the culmination of this contaminated creation. We are God's new creation, cleansed and made new creatures in Christ Jesus. We desire to be free from this world of sin. *"For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven, if so be that, being clothed, we shall not be found naked. For we groan, being burdened; not that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life. Now He that hath wrought us for the very same thing is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit. Therefore, we are always confident, knowing that, while we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord."* (2 Corinthians 5: 1-6)

Q. WHAT DOES GOD DESIRE?

B. THE ASPIRATIONS OF GOD DESIRES IT.

The Triune God in "Absolute Perfection" has an immutable plan that will be supreme! We also who have been in the midst of this conflict desire to behold His new creation which will also manifest great stability, as it will be free from the possibility of sin forever and ever. God could have made us all with an instinct like He made the animals, or He could have made us like robots under His complete control. However God's desire, according to the Bible, was and still is to bring into existence both angels and mankind with a "Freedom of choice," who willingly submit to the aspirations of God. In order to do this, the sum total of the possibility of sin had to run its course and be judged in its totality. That is what has been accomplished at the cross of Calvary. Always remember, that we do not add or take away any of the eternal glory of God. It is God who is the same, yesterday, today and forever! Through this marvelous plan of God, He is desiring to share His eternal glory with His creation. It is by grace alone that we have been offered this new relationship with the Triune God. May we constantly rejoice in the Lord and realize as the song says:

*"For nothing good have I, whereby thy grace to claim,
I'll wash my garments white, in the blood of Calvary's Lamb.*

*And when before the throne, I stand in Him complete,
Jesus died my soul to save, My lips shall still repeat,
Jesus paid it all, all to Him I owe,
sin had left a crimson stain, He washed it white as snow."*

A new creation will not be too hard for God to create, but a new creation where sin is forever exterminated, cost God His very own Eternal Son, to pay the debt of all sin and also remove it forever from His new creation. If there would have been some other way to eliminate the possibility of sin, God in His omniscience would have preferred it. It took the very Godhead to perform so great salvation. May we also be reminded from the Scriptures that this present creation of the heavens and the earth will be far inferior to that which is to come. We will study such aspects, as we consider this new creation of the future.

As God desires to share His perfection with His creation, He has reserved the very best for last, when every evil possibility is completely removed, for all who trust in Him. Personally, because we have placed our trust in the Lord Jesus Christ, we have been declared pardoned from all offenses against God, thought, word and deed. *"He hath not dealt with us after our sins, nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heavens are high above the earth, so great is His mercy toward them that fear Him. As far as the east is from the west, so far hath He removed our transgressions from us."* (Psalm 103: 10-12) This is a tremendous statement from God's Word, as we put our trust in the Lord Jesus Christ. God has fulfilled every requirement, paying the penalty for the sins of the whole world, in Christ Jesus. The precious blood of the Lord Jesus Christ cleanses us from our sins and provides us with an eternal covering of the righteousness of the Eternal Son of God. In this present world, we are witnesses to the saving grace of our loving Lord. *"Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is hidden with Christ in God. When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with Him in glory."* (Colossians 3: 2-4) God the Father's aspirations are to bring His creation into the eternal glory which the Triune God has. With our present finite mind, we cannot understand God's desire for His creatures, but someday we shall understand! The eternal glory of God will be revealed to us and through us, as we someday will enter into that eternal utopia of the Triune God. The future plans of God are far superior to anything that this present world has to offer.

Q. HOW GOOD WILL THE NEW HEAVEN BE?

C. THE NEW CREATION WILL BE FAR SUPERIOR.

As we rejoice in the Lord, in this present life, it is with anticipation according to the promises of God. *"Praise ye the Lord. I will praise the Lord with my whole heart, in the assembly of the upright, and in the congregation. The works of the Lord are great, sought out of all them who have pleasure therein. His work is honorable and glorious, and His righteousness endureth forever. He hath made His wonderful works to be remembered; the Lord is gracious and full of compassion."* (Psalms 111: 1-4) There is nothing or no one greater than the Living God, whom we serve! What we enjoy of this present world, cannot be compared to what God has promised in His new creation. *"But as it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him. But God hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit; for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea the deep things of God. For what man knoweth the things of man, except the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God. Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is of God; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God."* (1 Corinthians 2: 9-12) Study this Scripture very carefully, as the truth revealed is very important to us as believers. The reason why many Christians do not fully understand their position in Christ Jesus, is because they have not been taught, or they have not feasted upon the deep things of God's Word.

It is true that we have not experienced these wonderful things, as we travel through this life. But we can understand what the future holds, as we allow the Holy Spirit to teach us. The Holy Spirit not only gives us a new birth, but He also dwells within us. *"Nevertheless, when He, the Spirit of truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth; for He shall not speak of Himself, but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak; and He will show you things to come."* (John 16: 13) God the Holy Spirit is the greatest teacher of all times, and we need to take heed to His guiding hand, as He reveals the Scriptures to us. The Bible cannot be fully understood by the most educated and learned person, without the inward teaching by God the Holy Spirit. That is another reason why it is necessary to be "Born Again," by God the Holy Spirit.

Q. WHY THE NECESSITY OF A GLORIFIED BODY?

In the great and marvelous plan of God for the ages to come, God is now preparing for His "Future Utopia." The Eternal Son of God is the "First Fruits," through His resurrection from the dead, and we

shall be the rest of *"The Harvest."* We will receive a glorified eternal body, made like the body of the resurrected Jesus Christ. *"Beloved, now are we the children of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be, but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is."* (1 John 3: 2) Sin will be eradicated forever from the future creation of God. The Bible reminds us of that glorious future with God, when sin will never ever show its ugly head. *"to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the most Holy."* (Daniel 9: 24b) The Triune God has wonderful things in store for those who put their trust in Christ, for which we praise the Lord. Glorified bodies are necessary for our eternal existence with God in His new Heaven and new Earth. Those bodies will have capabilities beyond anything in this present world. They will be a combination of the spiritual as well as the physical like that of the resurrected Savior. Christ proved this to us, after His resurrection. The two disciples on the road to Emmaus, saw Christ in His glorified body. (Luke 24: 13-32) These disciples reported this to the other disciples. *"And as they thus spoke, Jesus Himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. But they were terrified and frightened, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And He said unto them, Why are ye troubled? And why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself; handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. And when He had thus spoken, He showed them His hands and His feet. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, He said unto them, Have ye here anything to eat? And they gave Him a piece of a broiled fish, and an honeycomb. And He took it, and did eat before them."* (Luke 24: 36-43)

These glorified bodies will be capable of traveling to the new heavens as well as the new earth, and will be like the resurrected body of the Lord Jesus Christ. We as human beings will be different from the holy angels, in at least two different ways.

1. God the Holy Spirit will be dwelling within us forever.
2. We will have a glorified body like the Lord Jesus Christ.

It is hard for us to understand this wonderful transformation that will take place when the Rapture occurs, but it will be a glorious experience by the grace of God. As we will remain in heaven for the duration of that terrible tribulation, and we will be prepared for the thousand year reign with Christ, during the kingdom age.

THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS REQUIRES GLORIFICATION.

There will be a great outreach with evangelism throughout the kingdom age upon this present earth. As Christ will rule with *"A Rod of Iron,"* in perfect righteousness. There will be a great need of ambassadors throughout the whole world. The commandments and ordinances of God will be taught, with the Beatitudes and teachings of the sermons on the Mount. The Old Testament saints, the New Testament saints as well as the believers from the great tribulation will be sent forth to proclaim *"The Gospel of the Kingdom."* This great evangelism will continue for a thousand years, under the most favorable circumstances. There will be opposition to our message, but to no avail, as righteousness shall reign! Our glorified bodies will be impregnable and nothing will be able to destroy them, having entered into that eternal state of Almighty God. *"And hast made us unto God a kingdom of priests, and we shall reign on the earth."* (Revelation 5: 10) As rapture saints, we will have a great influence throughout the whole world, under the most favorable conditions. This will be the final out reach among the human beings before *"The Great White Throne Judgement."* This will be the final test and separation of all evil from good, in preparation for the new heavens and the new earth. The Millennium will be the final test of earthly people to see whether they will accept the righteousness of God or if they will still desire to serve the evil forces of Satan.

THE SUPERIORITY OF THINGS TO COME.

Before the foundations of this present world, God reserved the superior creation for a future time when sin will be separated from it forever. God has kept the details of this new creation a secret, and only has given us some of the high lights of it. God will eternally dwell among men as He is dwelling among the holy angels. *"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God." (Revelation 21: 3)* There will be perfect harmony in God's new creation and sin and wickedness shall never occur again. The new creation shall be so glorious that regardless of our limited joys in the past, the new life will be absolutely superior and eternal. *"And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for the former things are passed away."* (Revelation 21: 4)

Q. WHAT WILL HAPPEN BEFORE THE NEW CREATION?

EVENTS PRECEDING THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH.

When the Rapture takes place, the saints of God will be brought into a glorious sight as we are ushered into the heavens above. There are beauties seen which Paul and John were not allowed to tell. We will then be exposed to the vastness of the heavens as we behold the Creator of all! The Lord has planned seven years for us to enjoy this universe before returning to earth.

Great preparations will be made for the saints of God in our glorified bodies to return to earth and reign with Christ during the thousand year kingdom of righteousness. Many earthly people will accept the gospel of the kingdom, but many will refuse. Longevity of life will be given to all with a restored nature. Christ will reign with a rod of iron from Jerusalem, the capital of the world. All nations will be under His supreme authority, after that great battle of Armageddon.

The conflict with sin will be with human beings who will still be born totally depraved. Satan and his demons will be in prison during the millennium, cast into the bottomless pit for a thousand years. The Millennium will end with Satan being freed for a little season, and again he will deceive many earthly people. Many, as the sands of the sea will follow him to his final destruction.

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT.

After God the Father sends fire from heaven down upon all the ungodly and casts Satan and his billions of demons into the lake of fire, then we will experience that second resurrection, when all of the ungodly will be raised from the dead and be judged by the Lord Himself. We as the saints of God will be present to witness the bowing of every knee and the confessing of every tongue that Jesus is Lord and the Eternal Son of God. *(Philippians 2: 9-11)* They will all be judged out of the books of their human good deeds and be found wanting, as compared to the perfect righteousness of God. They all will then be cast into the lake of fire and remain there forever, tormented by the wrath of God. They shall never escape. They will remain in this living death forever and ever!

THE ETERNAL NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH.

The first heavens and the first earth will pass away with fervent heat, making room for the New Heavens and the New Earth. *(2 Peter 3: 10-12)* *"Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, in which dwelleth righteousness." (2 Peter 3: 13)* When God destroys the old order, rest assured that the new order will be far superior to anything of the past.

That will be a glorious day when the conflict with sin is over and all things become new. *"And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people, and God Himself shall be with them, and be their God." (Revelation 21: 3)* This should give us great expectations as saints of God. It also should cause us to live for Christ. *"Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of Him in peace, without spot, and blameless." (2 Peter 3: 14)*

In considering all that God is planning for those who have put their trust in His Eternal Son, the

Lord Jesus Christ, may our lives be fruitful for the Lord while we pass through this present life. God has brought us into the highest possible position in Christ Jesus and only eternity will reveal this tremendous scope. May I again remind each of you of our great responsibility before the Lord. *"And be not conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. For I say, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think, but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith."* (Romans.12: 2-3)

THE NEW JERUSALEM.

This is as it were a combination of a bridal chamber for believers and a New Jerusalem. John saw a picture in which he was included, since this picture is a pre-view of that future Holy City of God. It must have been breath taking to John as he watch that great city descending from heaven. It must have shone with the glory of God. *"Having the glory of God; and her light was like a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal."* (Revelation 21: 11) This great city of God will be four square, and will measure hundreds of miles. It will be the dwelling place of the saints of all ages. It is the city with foundations whose builder and maker is God, of which Abraham by faith, waited for its appearing. (Hebrews 11:10-16)

THE NEW PARADISE

As I close this lesson, we have a very vivid description of the paradise with rivers of water flowing from the throne of God. We will have access to delicious fruits throughout eternity. All sin and the curses of old will be gone forever! There will be the brightness of God shining forth in that glorious paradise. *"And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him; And they shall see His face; and His name shall be in their foreheads. And there shall be no night there; and they need no lamp, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light, and they shall reign forever and ever."* (Revelation 22: 3-5) This new paradise will be a haven of rest with the glory of God enclosed around about it. This future home of all saints and God's holy angels will be more wonderful than we could ever dream. May each of us who know the Lord Jesus Christ as our personal Savior, not be weary in well doing for we serve the Eternal God who doeth all things well. Every effort that we make for the glory of God will be well repaid by Almighty God. God has sent forth His message through us in these earthen vessels that the excellency may be of God and not of us. *"And the Spirit and the bride say, Come, and let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. and whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely."* (Revelation 22: 17) *"The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen."* (Revelation 22: 21)

CONCLUSION

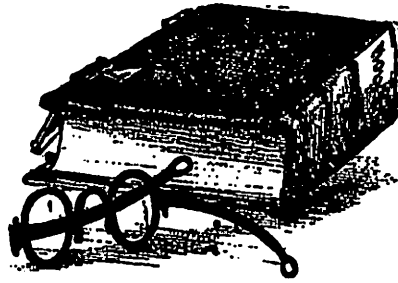
As we conclude this chapter in the history of Almighty God, may we be mindful that the best is yet to come. The good memories of the past will be but a foretaste of things to come. God's wonder working power will be exalted, bringing everlasting glory to the Triune God. This old world is a temporary abode and we have become new creatures in Christ Jesus. *"Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creation; old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new."* (2 Corinthians 5: 17) I again remind you, *"While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal."* (2 Corinthians 4: 18)

The Eternal Living God's desire is that all of His creation should be partakers of His perfection. We have been blessed with an abundance in the Lord Jesus Christ. *"Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ."* (Ephesians 1: 3) When one evaluates what God has already done for us, plus all of the promises He has made to us, we cannot help but sing praises unto Him. We have been chosen in Christ, and adopted as children of the royal family of God. Our acceptance is in and through the Eternal Son of God, through the precious shed blood of The Lamb of God. Our sins, past, present and future, have all been forgiven by the grace of God. We have been made joint heirs with Christ in all the wealth of God. God has placed a guarantee upon His many promises by sealing our lives with the Holy Spirit. (Ephesians 1: 3-14)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER TWELVE.

1. Compare briefly the world wide flood with the total destruction of the heavens and the earth. Scripture please.
2. Write briefly on (*Psalms 14: 1-3*).
3. Write briefly on (*Luke 21: 34-36*).
4. Write briefly on (*Romans 3: 9-19*).
5. Why is everyone born into this world condemned, apart from Christ?
6. Explain (*Romans 8: 19-23*).
7. What is God's purpose in giving us glorified bodies? Scripture please.
8. When can we expect an absolute perfection in God's creation?
9. Explain how we have a debt before God, apart from the Lord Jesus Christ.
10. Explain (*Psalms 103: 10-12*).
11. What should our priorities be in this present life? (*Colossians 3: 2-4*).
12. Compare the old creation with the new creation. Scripture please.
13. Explain (*1 Corinthians 2: 9-12*).
14. Who is the most thorough teacher of the Bible? Scripture please.
15. What are the requirements for a thorough knowledge of the Bible? Scripture please.
16. What is God's eternal aim according to (*Daniel 9: 24*)?
17. How does (*Luke 24: 36-43*) help us to understand a little more about the future glorified bodies?
18. Name two differences between the angels and human believers.
19. Write an essay on (*Revelation 5: 10*).
20. Write briefly on (*Revelation 21: 3-4*).
21. Write an essay on "The Bride and New Jerusalem."
22. Write an essay on "The New Paradise."
23. What is the final message in the Bible?

CHAPTER THIRTEEN



WHEN WILL WE BE FREE FROM SIN AND WICKEDNESS?

This old world of ours has been cursed with sin and no matter how many revivals occur, the trend is always toward more and more wickedness. One of the main reasons for this state of affairs is, "The Total Depravity of Man." We have been born with a sin nature and naturally we are led in the pathways of sin. Sin has been imputed to us and the scripture proclaims, *"And you hath He made alive, who were dead in trespasses and sins: In which in times past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the sons of disobedience; Among whom also we all had our manner of life in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others." (Ephesians 2: 1-3) This is a terrible indictment against all human beings, from God Himself, whether very religious or very ungodly. We are all dead in trespasses and sins and need the imputation of the righteousness of God. When we accept the Lord Jesus Christ as our Savior, who has already removed the sin barrier, we can rest assured that He will not impute sin unto us. *"Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin."* (Romans 4: 7-8) This is exactly the reason why the Holy Spirit refers to this grace of God as, "So Great Salvation." In order to obtain this imputation of the righteousness of God, we of necessity, must exercise our faith. *"For the promise that he should be heir of the world was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith."* (Romans 4: 13) Sin and wickedness have been judged at the cross and in the fullness of time, the total sin will be eradicated from God's creation forever and ever. This causes us to ask:*

Q. WHEN WILL THIS FINAL ACT TAKE PLACE?

A. THE FINAL CONFLICT WITH THE DEVIL.

We who believe in the Lord Jesus Christ would like this eradication of sin to take place immediately. But let me remind you, that God is long suffering and does not wish that one soul should perish. (2 Peter 3: 9) I rejoice in the Lord that He waited until I was born again, so that I too could be joint heirs with Christ in the fullness of life everlasting. God is allowing the cup of iniquity to be full and has a date set for the final conflict with the devil and his fallen angels. Until that day comes, we, as believers have been equipped in the spiritual realm with the proper battle equipment. *"Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil."* (Ephesians 6: 11)

Q. IS THE CHRISTIAN LIFE A DAILY BATTLE?

THE BATTLEGROUND AND WARFARE OF BELIEVERS.

We as believers would be easy prey for the devil and his fallen angels, if we were to fight this battle

alone. Praise God, we have been fully equipped for survival against the wiles of the devil. May we consider our defence against this spirit conflict. God has provided all we need for the defense against the world, the flesh and the devil. There are very important provisions which God has provided for those who desire to have victory over these three enemies.

Q. WHAT ARE OUR WEAPONS TO FIGHT OUR THE SPIRITUAL ENEMY?

Let us carefully review each weapon provided to confront every trial and tribulation that human beings face. Realize that: *"the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds, casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against God."* (2 Corinthians 10: 4-5a)

1. A New Birth is necessary.

Our defence against the enemies of God are in the spiritual realm and in order to cope with their attack, we must be born again by God the Holy Spirit. This battleground is not in the physical but in the spiritual. May we always remember that the battle is the Lord's and we must be born into the Royal family of God to combat the enemies of our soul. Christ has clearly stated, *"Marvel not that I said unto you, Ye must be born again."* (John 3: 7) This gives us the "Divine Spark" in the spirit warfare, with the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit to guide and direct us through the Word of God. Your goodness, religion or social welfare are all useless against the wiles of the devil. When you have God the Holy Spirit within you, then you can be assured, *"Ye are of God, little children, and have overcome them, because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world."* (1 John 4: 4)

2. The Word of God.

The Word of God is the sword of the Lord, of which the devil and his fallen angels fear tremendously. We read, *"For the Word of God is living, and powerful, and sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.:"* (Hebrews 4: 12) God's Word is so powerful that Satan even tries to use it against believers, either misquoted or taken out of context. He tried that trick with the Lord Himself during the wilderness temptations. (Matthew 4: 11); (Mark 1: 12-13); (Luke 4: 1-13) When one is in the presence of those demon possessed, audible quotations from the Word of God are necessary, with much prayer and singing praise to the Lord. I personally had the privilege of helping a Hindu priest who became a Christian, who was being tormented by demons. I told him to quote and read aloud the Scriptures, to cause the demons to flee, and he got the victory. *"But the Word of God is not bound."* (2 Timothy 2: 9b) The sword of the Lord is mighty and may we constantly use this precious Word in defence against all wickedness. *"Thy Word have I hidden in mine heart, that I might not sin against thee."* (Psalm 119: 11) As we also read in the Bible, *"Put on the whole armor of God, that we may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil."* (Ephesians 6: 11) The battle is the Lord's and victory over the evil powers are accomplished by faith, established in and through the Word of God. As God's Word reminds us, *"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places."* (Ephesians 6: 12) This gives us an insight to the great conflict of the ages and the armor of God which is provided to accomplish the victory of evil, by the grace of God.

3. Keeping in Fellowship with God.

It is of the utmost importance that we maintain sweet harmony with God, as we battle against the evil forces of this world. Our line of communication is kept open at all times, when we continually let the light of our glorious Lord shine in and through our lives. *"But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ, His Son cleanseth us from all sin."* (1 John 1: 7) This again should be a continual process in the Christian's life. Christian, whoever and wherever you are, you need a constant cleansing by Almighty God. *"If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us."* (1 John 1: 8) Continually make full use of (1 John 1: 9), and

God will not only keep on cleansing you, but be able to use you in His service.

4. Manifest your Faith through Prayer.

If you are out of fellowship with the Triune God, do not expect to have a powerful prayer life. Sin in your life will hinder you from maintaining a fruitful life for the Lord Jesus Christ. *"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints."* (Ephesians 6: 18)

God's realm is timeless because He always existed and always will exist. The Word reminds us, *"But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day."* (2 Peter 3: 8) This is of the greatest importance to us as we study the Word of God. God is in control of total destiny and nothing occurs outside the sovereignty of God. As far as God is concerned, Satan and the fallen angels have been thoroughly dealt with. God has a very important plan for all ages and in His immutability nothing needs to be altered or changed. The important issue at this stage in God's eternal plan, is the gathering together all the saints of all ages for His wonderful Utopia to come!

Q. WHEN WILL THE DEVIL BE FOUGHT?

THE FINAL CONFLICT WITH THE DEVIL AND THE DEMONS.

God in His sovereignty is by no means finished with Satan and the fallen angels. They have misused the power which was given to them in the beginning and before sin was found in their lives. God has restricted their use of this original power, and God has allowed them freedom of choice just like He did for human beings of all ages. A great division has occurred between God's servants and Satan's slaves. Satan who made himself the god of this world system will go to the extreme deception during the great tribulation. He will especially have 42 months or 1,260 days which Daniel by the Holy Spirit called, *"The Abomination of Desolation."* This will take place when Satan will be thrown out of heaven by Michael the archangel. (Revelation 12: 7-12) Satan will then place all of his power and energy in attempting to rule the world, with his billions of demons and the ungodly of this world. His chief enemy will be the Triune God, and the Hebrew nation. There will be great numbers of all races slain because they do not take the mark of the beast, and the Word of God describes it like this, *"After this I beheld and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, kindreds, and peoples, and tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands."* (Revelation 7: 9) Who are these, and from where did they all come? Well, you must read on through this portion of Scripture which reads, *"These are they who came out of the great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb."* (Revelation 7: 14b) God will send one of the greatest revivals of all time, during the latter part of the great tribulation. Though they will be slain for the cause of Christ, yet they will have the victory over the world, the flesh, and the devil. This is but another indication of God's marvelous grace toward mankind. Multitudes of precious souls will be saved during the great tribulation, but will seal their salvation through their martyrdom. In every age, God has the victory, and we can praise Him for the victory that He has in our own lives, as we yield to God the Holy Spirit. We cannot fight this battle alone but we need every resource which God has placed at our command.

Q. WHEN WILL THE EARTH BE RULED BY GOD?

ALMIGHTY GOD RECLAIMS THE TITLE DEED TO THIS WORLD.

In the study of the Book of Revelation, remember that the Apostle John is visualizing all of this as in the present, even though God is giving him a glimpse into the things to come in the future. A clear picture of this has been presented by the Holy Spirit in Revelation chapter 10. God the Creator of this world will at that time, take possession of this world. This will be after the great tribulation, at the final battle of Armageddon. Note what the Holy Spirit has to say, prior to this great battle. *"And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast, and out of the mouth of the false prophet. For they are the spirits of devils, working miracles, which go forth unto kings of the earth and the whole world, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty. Behold, I*

come as a thief. Blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments, lest he walk naked, and they see his shame. And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue *Armageddon*." (Revelation 16: 13-16) This is clearly stated and there should be no doubt about that final battle, as the Lord Himself descends from heaven with the angelic hosts and the saints of all ages. "And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and He that sat upon him was called *Faithful and True*, and in righteousness He doth judge and make war." (Rev 19: 11) This will be the final battle for Satan, the billions of demons and the ungodly of all nations. Some may refute this statement, referring to the gathering of all nations at the end of the Millennium. There will be a conflict at that particular time, as the ungodly of all nations gather together and surround Jerusalem, but the battle never takes place. Note what the Holy Spirit reveals. "And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison. And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, *Gog and Magog*, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city; AND FIRE CAME DOWN FROM GOD OUT OF HEAVEN, AND DEVOURED THEM." (Rev 20: 7-9) You may call this the final battle, but it was only one sided, with fire from heaven devouring them. All the saints of all ages will behold this mighty victory of God as we will be encamped about that great city, Jerusalem.

Let us now review a little concerning the righteous rule of Christ and the conditions which will occur, before the final blow against Satan and his demons.

Q. WHEN WILL SIN, SATAN AND ALL EVIL BE DESTROYED?

THE DOOM OF THE SUM TOTAL OF ALL SIN.

Satan, the billions of demons and the ungodly shall have their last stand against God during the battle of Armageddon, and God will begin the reign of righteousness with "A rod of Iron." This will be the fore-runner of the eternal reign of righteousness, and will also be the final testing age of God's righteousness versus Satan's reign of unrighteousness. There will be the "Freedom of Choice," but with individual consequences. As the kingdom of righteousness of one thousand years is completed and Satan and his demons are set free from their imprisonment, they will again deceive the nations, starting with that nation of Russia, and mustering up a tremendous army with all sorts of weapons from the whole world, God will allow them to surround Jerusalem and all of the saints. No ground forces from the Eternal Son of God will be necessary, for fire from heaven will devour all of the human beings. The demons and Satan will be thrown into the lake of fire to remain there forever and ever. Sin will have run its course and as we will see, the great white throne judgement will settle the judgements and sentences will be given. Note how the evil forces will be sentenced. "And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever." (Revelation 20: 10) This will terminate all evil practice, and God will bring the ungodly forth to be judged at the Great White Throne, which will be the second resurrection.

As I write this book, the souls of the ungodly dead will remain in hell, under great torment, for at least another thousand years. We are looking for the Rapture to take place any day now, and then after the Rapture takes place, the tribulation and the thousand year reign of the Lord, in righteousness, will take place. After that all the ungodly will be resurrected from hell, to stand before the great white throne and be judged. As has been mentioned, this will be the second resurrection, before they are judged and cast forever into the lake of fire and brimstone. Both hell and death will be cast into this lake of fire, to remain there forever and ever. Let us now examine the great white throne judgement.

Q. WHO WILL STAND BEFORE THE GREAT WHIT THRONE TO BE JUDGED?

B. THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT.

This second resurrection will bring forth all the ungodly and wicked beings of all ages. There will also be many very religions souls among these who must stand before the Great White Throne. Their sins will not be the issue, but rather their rejection of the Lord Jesus Christ, will cause their final judgement. Christ paid the sum total of all sin at the cross. "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world." (John 1: 29)

There will be many good religious people among these resurrected, who chose to do their own thing apart from accepting Christ as their personal savior. Those of us who have acknowledged the Eternal Son of God and accepted Him as our personal Savior will not come to this condemnation, because we have past from death unto eternal life in Christ. *"We know that we have passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren. He that loveth not his brother abideth in death."* (1 John 3: 14)

The ungodly who will be brought forth from the dead, along with any ungodly who are still alive, shall be gathered together to be judged. Because they rejected God's gift, and tried to rely on their own human good works to achieve salvation, these works of theirs will be tested according to the perfect righteousness of God. All will come short of God's requirements even the best of humans who did it their own way. Even one sin in a lifetime falls short of God's required perfection, and who else except Jesus Christ has lived a sinless life? All the ungodly are without excuse before God and they will be judged according to the absolute righteousness of God which is required.

The one who will sit upon this Great White Throne will be none other than the Lord Jesus Christ who is the Creator of heaven and earth. (John 1: 1-3) *"And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them."* (Revelation 20: 11) This could only be the Eternal Son of God who will visibly be seated upon this great white throne.

THE DOOM OF THE FIRST CREATION.

We are told what is to happen to this present heaven and earth, by the mighty hand of the Lord. *"But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store reserved unto fire against the day of judgement and perdition of ungodly men.....But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up."* (2 Peter 3: 7-10) I do not know whether God will allow all these ungodly, who stand before The Eternal Son of God, to see this great and mighty destruction of the first creation, or not, but we will be there as the saints of God. God created both the heavens and earth out of nothing and He will return it all to nothing! Our God is sovereign over all and is omnipotent.

Q. WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO ALL WHO REJECT JESUS?

THE DOOM OF THE UNGODLY OF ALL AGES.

This will be the supreme judgement and punishment of all ungodly. It will include all from the very beginning of the creation of man until the final ungodly one. There will no doubt be much weeping and sorrow felt among all who will be called to this final judgement. *"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."* (Philippians 2: 9-11) All the ungodly of all ages will have to acknowledge Jesus Christ as King of kings and Lord of lords, before they go to their eternal damnation.

"And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire." (Revelation 20: 12-15) This will be a terrible damnation which will never cease and the wrath of God will remain upon them forever and ever.

This will be the last of unrighteousness that will ever appear in all of God's creation. God's great plan of all ages is unchangeable and the best is yet to come. By God's grace and provision, sin will disappear forever, and will never appear in God's new creation. God is allowing the freedom of choice unto all, with a clear guide to God's righteousness revealed in the Bible. In that sweet by and by, we will enter into God's "*Utopia*," where sin shall be no more and everlasting righteousness shall reign forever! (Daniel 9: 24)

All who reject Christ, will be without excuse, no matter how religious they have been during their life upon planet earth. None of them will escape from this final judgement and all of them will be condemned and cast into the eternal lake of fire. Whoever you may be, don't make the mistake of thinking that at death you will pass into nothing! There are but two strains of life, 1. A living life with Almighty God forever and ever. 2. A living death with Satan and his demons, and all of the ungodly of all ages. If you choose the latter, there will be no love for one another, but hatred and constant torment will continue throughout eternity to come.

In the New Heaven and New Earth, God's holiness and goodness, will never have to be confronted by sin again. The separation between good and evil will be sealed forever, and that new creation will be free from contamination and be filled with God's glorification forever and ever. Let us see what the Bible has to say about the New Heaven and New Earth.

C. ALL THINGS CREATED NEW.

At Death, we who believe, will be temporarily delivered from the evidence of sin, because we will ascend up into the Paradise of God. Sin, however, will continue to be present in this world until the end of this world. That is why God wants this old creation removed forever! The Old Testament predicts the coming of God's "Utopia," and all the godly will live happily there forever and ever! Abraham bore witness, "For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God." (Hebrews 11: 10) Isaiah the prophet was also given insight to things yet to come by God the Holy Spirit. "For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth, and the former shall not be remembered, nor come to mind." (Isaiah 65: 17) Any beauty that we have seen in this present world will be far inferior to what God is going to create, when all things become new. We are forerunners of things to come, because we are new creatures in Christ Jesus. (2 Corinthians 5: 17) We have been granted a new and living way, rather than being dead in trespasses and sins. (Hebrews 10: 20) We look for all things to be made new and old things to pass away. "Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, in which dwelleth righteousness." (2 Peter 3: 13) This present world is corrupt because Satan has brought sin into the present heavens, and the present earth. God will therefore do away with this present creation and make room for His new creation. "Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of Him in peace, without spot, and blameless." (2 Peter 3: 14)

God will destroy all of His old creation, and separate all the fallen angels and the ungodly of this earth, and cast them into the lake of fire which will then be sealed up forever and ever. God's grace toward those who have rejected His Son will have run out. God righteous judgement will condemn them to the lake of fire forever and ever. The torment and separation from their Creator will be filled with everlasting wrath from God, and hatred one against another. You may say, yes, many of my earthly friends and relatives will be there in this lake of fire, and can't I at least talk to them? You must remember, whoever you may be, that God is all that is pure and the true. There will be none of God's love in the eternal lake of fire. As Satan and his fallen angels will be tormented "day and night," so will all human being who have rejected God's provision for salvation.

Q. WHAT WILL THE NEW HEAVENS AND NEW EARTH BE LIKE?

THE LIKENESS OF THE NEW HEAVENS AND THE NEW EARTH.

In God's new creation, there will be no room for sin and evil forever and ever. There will not even be an evil thought, and the fellowship between the holy angels and the saints of all ages will be wonderful. We will exchange our pattern of thought word and deed with that of the holy angels. There will be perfect harmony in the glory of God. Here are a few outstanding changes that will take place in the New Heavens and the New Earth, according to what the Bible teaches. As John on the Isle of Patmos said, "Even so Come Lord Jesus." (Revelation 22: 20b)

1. Time will be no more, for there shall be no night there. (Rev 21: 25); (Rev 22: 5)
2. There will be no sin there. (Dan 9: 24)

3. There will be everlasting perfect righteousness of God. (*Dan 9: 24*)
4. There will be everlasting Divine fellowship, with sin outlawed forever. (*1 John 3: 4-10*)
5. There will be an eternal perfection in all creation. (*Revelation 21: 1-7*)
6. God will eternally dwell with both the holy angels and the saints of God. (*Revelation 21: 3 & 7*)
7. The Pentecostal saints will forever be married to the Lamb of God. (*Revelation 19: 7-9*)
8. There will never be poverty or want of anything, as God will provide all that will ever be needed. (*Revelation 21: 4-7*)
9. God will assign responsibilities according to individual faithfulness in this present life. (*1 Corinthians 3: 14*); (*Matthew 25: 14-29*)
10. There will be an eternal and rich fellowship between the holy angels and the saints. (*Matthew 18: 10*); (*Matthew 22: 30*); (*Matthew 24: 31*)
11. The ministering angels will be made known and remain in sweet fellowship with the saints. (*Luke 16: 22*); (*Hebrews 13: 2*); (*Hebrews 1: 14*)
12. God's new creation will be far superior to this present creation. (*Revelation 21: 4*); (*Isaiah 65: 17*)
13. There will be one language as there was before the tower of Babel. (*Genesis 11: 1*)
14. All will worship Almighty God with no false religions. (*Revelation 21: 22*)

God has appointed a time when all things shall become new, and all these present temporary difficulties will be gone forever! We place our complete trust in the Lord and what He teaches us through the Bible. The entire creation is groaning for deliverance from the curse of sin. *"For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now."* (*Romans 8: 22*) There is no time for us to sit back and idly wait for the things to come. This good news must be shared with others, while there is still time. We have heard the words from our Lord. *"As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world."* (*John 17: 18*) As Jesus meets with His disciples before He ascends on high, this is what Christ said to them before He departed to His heavenly throne. *"And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, All authority is given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go Ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you, and, lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the age. Amen."* (*Matthew 28: 19-20*)

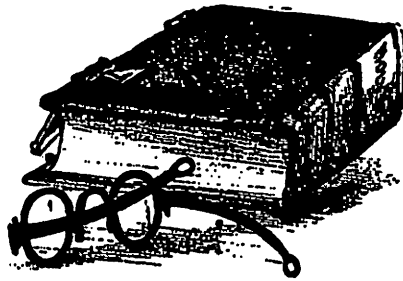
The Lord has had God the Father send God the Holy Spirit, not only to give us new life, but to dwell within us, protecting us against the evil forces. We must always remember that the Holy Spirit is a person and not merely an influence or just a power for us to plug into, and control as we wish. As I have mentioned many times, we do not get God the Holy Spirit by measures, getting Him piece meal, but rather He gets all of us. You will not be able to understand the Bible without Him guiding you into these marvelous truths. Don't expect help from the Holy Spirit, if you are grieving him in your daily life. *"If we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit."* (*Galatians 5: 25*) We are called into God's Royal Family, by being born again and adopted into the Divine family of God. *"For ye were once darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord; walk as children of light. (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth), Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord."* (*Ephesians 5: 8-10*)

May we wait patiently for that great and wonderful day when sin will be eradicated forever from God's creation. God has promised to bring it to pass and may we be faithful to the Lord as we, "*Walk worthy of the vocation to which ye are called.*" (Ephesians 4: 1b) May I also remind you that we should also manifest the fruit of the Holy Spirit in our lives. (Gal 5: 22-23) We are not to choose what part of the fruit of the Spirit we best like, but we are to produce the complete fruit of the Spirit. This Divine love that sent Christ to the cross should also be expressed in our Christian walk, by the power of the Holy Spirit. "*Be ye, therefore, followers of God, as dear children; And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given Himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling savor.*" (Ephesians 5: 1-2)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER THIRTEEN.

1. What must take place to get rid of the "Total Depravity of Man"? Scripture.
2. Explain (*Ephesians 2: 1-3*) & (*Romans 4: 7-8*)
3. Write an essay on, "The Final Conflict" Quote Scripture.
4. What do you understand about the meaning of "The Weapons of Our Warfare"?
5. What are some of the requirements for "Christian Victory"?
6. Write an essay on (*Romans 7: 9-14*)
7. Explain what the Bible teaches about "The Battle Of Armageddon." Scripture.
8. When does (*Revelation 20: 7-9*) take place?
9. Write an essay on the subject, "The Battle that will never be Fought."
10. Explain (*Revelation 20: 10*).
11. Who all are included in "The Second Resurrection"? Scripture.
12. Will any be saved who are judged at "The Great White Throne Judgement"?
13. What is the final "Unpardonable Sin"?
14. Why must both the Heavens and Earth of this creation be destroyed?
15. When will (*Philippians 2: 9-11*) be fulfilled?
16. Why must "Death and Hell" be cast into the lake of fire? (*Revelation 20: 12-15*)
17. Write of your understanding of (*Daniel 9: 24*).
18. Why must all things be created new?
19. Explain (*Isaiah 65: 17*).
20. Explain (*2 Peter 3: 14*).
21. Name as many changes as possible that will take place in the New Heavens and the New Earth.
22. Since we look for all things new and we have already been made new creatures in Christ Jesus, what should be our behavior in this life as Christians?
23. Write a brief essay on (*Ephesians 5: 1-3*).
24. Write on "Freedom of Choice."

CHAPTER FOURTEEN



WHY DO WE NEED NEW BODIES?

In this present finite life, we are so involved with issues of time and material gains that we lose the perspective of "True Values." Since we have not experienced the eternal realm of God, we place a great emphasis on this present life. May we always remember that God's thoughts are far different from our thoughts and therefore we must study the Bible so that we understand the Divine viewpoint, rather than be limited to the Human Viewpoint. Let us study this chapter very carefully, for there is a Divine purpose in God's plan in both these present conditions and the new eternity that is to come. *"While we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal."* (2 Corinthians 4: 18) Now that we are new creatures and have been partakers of the new birth by the Holy Spirit, our aim should be to glorify the Triune God.

Q. WILL WE BE ABLE TO GLORIFY GOD BETTER IN PERFECTED BODIES?

A. TO GLORIFY GOD, NEW BODIES ARE REQUIRED.

God is a God of perfection and by the grace of God, we have been promised to be partakers of His perfection, through the Lord Jesus Christ, His Eternal Son. Apart from God's holiness and righteousness, we cannot glorify God the Father. That is why it is necessary for us to become a new creation with a glorified body, like unto the Son of God. This would be an impossible attainment in ourselves, but thanks be unto God, who has made a way. Those bodies that have experienced death and corruption, must put on incorruption and we who will be alive, when the Rapture takes place, must be changed. *"In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump; for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality."* (1 Corinthians 15: 52-53)

Q. WHO WILL BE GIVEN NEW BODIES?

Now we must understand who will qualify for such a change? There will be saints from the Old Testament age, saints from the age of Grace, saints from the Great Tribulation years, and finally saints who become believers during the Millennial age.

1. THOSE OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS, OFFERING ANIMAL SACRIFICES.

Study of the Old Testament with the guidance of God the Holy Spirit reveals how God was dealing with Old Testament saints from Adam to the Apostles. God has specific qualifications for those who will receive glorified bodies in the first resurrection. Although the amount of revelation was different for the Old Testament saints, they still offered animal sacrifices, by faith, to cover their sins until the supreme sacrifice was offered upon the cross to take away their sins.

Some have referred to the sacrifices of the Old Testament and the sacrificial death of Jesus Christ in the New Testament as the common red line of sacrificial blood that weaves its way from Genesis to Revelation. Although the time periods of the past varied, the sacrifice remained the same, *"for without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sins."* (Hebrews 9: 22) God promised to remove our sins as far

as the East is from the West, (*Psalm 103: 12*) By faith the Old Testament saints offered animal sacrifice in anticipation that one day, God would fulfil His Word. *"But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement for our peace was upon Him, and with His stripes we are healed."* (*Isaiah 53: 5*) This is certainly sufficient evidence from the Word of God that the Old Testament saints looked for the supreme sacrifice which would remove the sin barrier completely.

In the history of the world, saints who lived in years referred to as "BC" looked forward for that supreme sacrifice, while those who lived in years referred to as "AD" look back to Jesus' payment for the sins of the whole world. Even though the disciples watched the supreme sacrifice happen, they were confused until after His resurrection, when Jesus explained what had happened. Jesus, and on Pentecost the Holy Spirit, opened their eyes to what the scriptures had said and also what Jesus had taught them. *"Behold the lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world."* (*John 1: 29*)

In The Old Testament age, sacrifices and the laws of God were as school masters to teach us God's holiness and His requirements in order to obtain eternal life in a glorified body. They proved to us that without the Grace of God we would all be condemned.

The Old Testament saints were promised, *"And it shall come to pass afterward, that I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, your old men shall dream dreams, your young men shall see visions."* (*Joel 2: 28*) God poured out the Holy Spirit on the day of Pentecost to the Jews, the Samaritans, the Gentiles and also the living Old Testament saints. (*Acts 2: 1-12*); (*Acts 8: 17*); (*Acts 10: 44*); (*Acts 19: 1-7*). That day began the age in which we live today, the age of grace.

2. THOSE BORN BY GOD THE HOLY SPIRIT.

We who are of this age of grace, who are partakers of that promise of (*Joel 2: 28*) can be grateful to God for this new birth through God the Holy Spirit. Since the day of Pentecost until the Rapture, God the Holy Spirit has been providing new birth to all who accept Christ as their personal Savior. He not only provides this new birth, but He also dwells within every believer of this age. (*John 3: 5*); (*John 14: 16-17*). Both the Old Testament saints and the New Testament saints will receive a glorified body when the Rapture takes place. This will be the first resurrection as mentioned in (*Revelation 20: 6*). The second death will be reserved for the ungodly of all ages.

After the Rapture of the saints of all ages, there will also be a spiritual revival during that age of the Great Tribulation. In that age, a great many believers will seal their faith with their very own life. (*Revelation 7: 9-14*)

3. THOSE COMING OUT FROM THE GREAT TRIBULATION.

The first resurrection will also extend to those believers who come out of the great tribulation. The first resurrection will mysteriously extend to those believers during the Millennium. The second resurrection will take place when the Lord is seated upon the Great White Throne. *"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years."* (*Revelation 20: 6*)

As we have mentioned before in these teachings, there will be a great revival during the great tribulation and many will be come believers in the Lord, and seal their salvation with their physical death. (*Revelation 7: 9-14*) They will receive their glorified bodies and then return with Christ as a kingdom of priests for the Millennium.

4. THOSE BELIEVERS DURING THE MILLENNIUM.

There will be many believers who will be alive at the end of the great tribulation, who will flee to the hills for refuge in the Lord. (*Matthew 24: 15-20*); (*Mark 13: 14-18*); (*Luke 21: 20-23*). The mountains will offer protection during the great tribulation. Those believers who live through the ordeal will enter into the kingdom of righteousness alive and will serve the Lord. We do not know completely what their status will be, but we know that they will continue in the physical life, bearing children during the Kingdom of Righteousness. The children will then have the freedom of choice and will have to accept Christ or reject

Christ according to their personal desire.

As the saints of all times teach the kingdom principles, many will accept Christ the King of kings and Lord of lords as their personal Savior. They will follow the practice begun by John the Baptist, and identify themselves as subjects of the kingdom by being baptized. Incidentally, the practice of baptism took on a new significance after Pentecost to mean identification with the death, burial and resurrection of Jesus Christ. In the Millennium, it will again signify subjection to the Kingdom and to Jesus Christ the King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

The saints will have a great out reach into the whole world in our glorified bodies. We will teach the Beatitudes, and the truth of the Sermons on the Mount, plus all Christ's earthly teachings. The Bible will be thoroughly taught among all. We shall have freedom to go into every school and teach the Word of God, with a ministry of prayer. Christ will rule the whole world from Jerusalem with a "Rod of Iron," and will proclaim the righteousness of God with great power. (*Ps 2: 9*); (*Rev 2: 27*); (*Rev 12: 5*)

Q. WHY WOULD THESE EARTHLY SICKLY BODIES BE INADEQUATE FOR HEAVEN?

B. THESE NEW BODIES ARE NECESSARY FOR OUR DIVINE OR HEAVENLY LIFE.

There is a very important statement from the Word of the Lord. "*But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth; for the Father seeketh such to worship Him. God is Spirit; and they that worship Him must worship Him in spirit and in truth.*" (*John 4: 23-24*) One cannot worship the Living God without being alive spiritually. That life can only come from God the Holy Spirit who gives us the spiritual birth. At this present time we are waiting for the Rapture to take place so that these bodies can be changed and become glorified, and sanctified, making possible true worship with the Triune God.

God provides the Holy Spirit within us as a guarantee for a future glorified body. The Holy Spirit has made possible this Divine or Heavenly Life in which we will enjoy all eternity to come. This brings us to a very important event which will take place in heaven, after the Rapture. It will be a very sacred time in the life of the body of Christ, when we are formerly united to Christ in marriage.

Q. DO YOU THINK CHRIST WOULD WANT A CONTAMINATED BRIDE?

C. WE ARE DESTINED TO BE THE BRIDE OF CHRIST.

God has used the term marriage of the Lamb as the most descriptive relation that the true church will have with the Lord Jesus Christ. "*Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honor to Him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and His wife hath made herself ready. And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white; for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.*" (*Revelation 19: 7-8*)

As members of the body of Christ, we will have a glorious eternity. It is hard for us to understand the depth of the riches in Christ Jesus as we face such a proclamation by God, in our behalf. That Divine spark has been implanted within our lives in this present life, preparing us for that wonderful relationship with Christ the Lamb of God who has taken away all our sins.

All the Old Testament saints will attend that heavenly wedding when we will be married to the Lamb. "*Blessed are they who are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are true sayings of God.*" (*Revelation 19: 9b*) This is one important event that will take place in heaven after the Rapture of the saints of God from all ages. The Lord Himself loveth the true church, "*For we are members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones.*" (*Ephesians 5: 30*) Christ is the head of the church and of each member.

The Lord is waiting to have that trumpet blown, and the heavens opened with a shout! The Lord Himself has promised to return in the clouds and receive His future bride unto Himself, along with all the Old Testament saints. "*I will come again, and receive you unto Myself, that where I am, there ye shall be also.*" (*John 14: 3b*) The Bridegroom Himself will meet us in the air! What a day of rejoicing that will be! This will be a glorious sight as we behold our Savior face to face and become like Him. (*1 John 3: 1-3*) The Lord Himself will bring us into the presence of God the Father. "*To present you holy and unblamable and un-reprovable in His sight.*" (*Colossians 1: 22b*)

From these various portions of Scripture and a lot more, we learn the importance and necessity of

our being clothed with the righteousness of Christ in a glorified body. We already have the guarantee of these marvelous things to come, through the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit. We who are of this age of grace are highly honored among all the saints of God. Being born again by the Holy Spirit can only take place during the church age from the day of Pentecost onward until the Rapture of the saints.

May I remind you that the Old Testament saints were promised the outpouring of the Holy Spirit at a future time. (Joel 2: 28) However, it was not until Pentecost that it actually happened. Note what the Holy Spirit through Paul had to say to some of the Old Testament saints which were baptized with John's baptism. *"He said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Spirit since ye believed? And they answered unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there is any Holy Spirit."* (Acts 19: 2)

We must not be confused about the baptism of John the Baptist. It was not the same as christian baptism as some would claim, but rather it was an identification with and for the kingdom age. John said: *"Repent ye: for the Kingdom of heaven is at hand."* (Matthew 3: 2) Christian baptism started on the day of Pentecost, preparing a peculiar people for a new relationship with God as the future bride of Christ. May we take special note of this and correct our thinking according to the Word of God. Our destination as believers of this age of grace is to be the bride of Christ.

CONCLUSION

As we conclude this discussion of the necessity of new eternal bodies, may we bear in mind the following truths from the Bible.

1. The necessity of glorified spiritual bodies for the purpose of worship.
2. The differences between members of the body of Christ and all other saints,
3. We as all believers have passed from death unto a Divine life or Heavenly life in Christ Jesus.
4. Those of the age of grace are destined to be the bride of Christ.
5. All things are to become new, and henceforth new bodies are necessary.
6. There will be, of necessity, glorified bodies during the Millennium, when we will be sent throughout the world to teach God's righteousness.
7. A new spiritual body apart from the sin nature must be provided for our eternal abode with the Triune God.

In the following chapter, as we conclude this Bible study, we will deal with the separation of the ungodly from believers, and we will give a brief perspective of things to come. As you conclude this study concerning difficult questions answered, I remind you that very few of these difficult questions have been completely and totally answered in these lessons. My intention, however, with such a study is to help you in your biblical search, as you confront various questions that come up in your christian walk.

There are many difficult questions from the Bible that are God's secrets. God is in the process of making all things new with a total eradication of sin. These present bodies of ours are *"Totally Depraved"* and God is not in the business of renovation, but rather in regeneration. The question of "Why do we need new bodies?" is very important. It is nothing for God to create the new heavens and earth, but it took His very own Son to die for the sins of the whole world, to make possible for us to fellowship with the Triune God for eternity in the new heaven and earth.

Christ being the first fruits of the resurrection, with a glorified body should be evidence enough to us of our future glorified bodies. Nothing is too hard for our Almighty God! *"Thus saith God, the Lord, He who created the heavens, and stretched them out; He who spread forth the earth, and that which cometh out of it: He who giveth breath unto the people upon it, and spirit to them that walk in it: I the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee; and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the nations, to open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and*

those who sit in darkness out of the prison house.” (Isaiah 42: 5-7) This of course was spoken directly to Israel, but it applies to all the saints of God. We have been commissioned by Christ to go tell to the nations this good news that the best is yet to come.

We who have put our trust in the Lord have been chosen to be His representatives before this world of sin. *“But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a people of His own, that we should show forth the praise of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvelous light.” (1 Peter 2: 9)* We are ambassadors of Christ, telling the world that in Christ Jesus we have salvation, we are kept and are satisfied! We may not know too much of the future, but we know the one who holds the future. Let us study God's Word, in order to understand the deep things of which God has spoken.

These principles set forth can only be accomplished as we allow the Holy Spirit to guide us into these eternal truths. We can gain a certain amount of knowledge of God's Word, but we need God the Holy Spirit to give us wisdom in the use of this knowledge. God intends for believers to be faithful workers, rightly dividing the Word of truth, while being led by the Holy Spirit. One does not obtain these truths of the Bible immediately, but it requires a constant study, under the supervision of the Holy Spirit. We need to read various comments about the Bible from God's servants who have constantly been in touch with the Holy Spirit. But for us to be established in the Biblical teachings, we need a close walk in the Spirit.

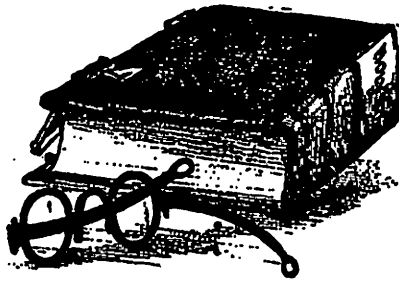
God has given us God the Holy Spirit as an advanced influence in our lives for many reasons. I close this chapter by listing some of the principles involved in your spiritual understanding of the Word of God.

1. Do not grieve the Holy Spirit with a sinful life. (*Ephesians 4: 30*)
2. Do not quench the power of the Holy Spirit in you life. (*1 Timothy 5: 19*)
3. Allow the Holy Spirit to keep on filling your life with Himself. (*Ephesians 3: 19*)
4. Read the Bible daily, and allow the Holy Spirit to teach you the Word of God. (*John 16: 13*)
5. For a clearer knowledge under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, keep within the context for identification as to whom it is written. (*Romans 8: 14*)
6. When a difficult Scripture is being read, relate the whole plan of God to your findings. (*2 Timothy 3: 16*); (*John 14: 16,26*); (*John 15: 26*); (*John 16: 7*)
7. Remember that the Holy Spirit is continually praying for you as you search the Scriptures. (*Romans 8: 26*)
8. For a better understanding of the Bible, as believers, constantly confess your sins to the Lord, getting rid of the wood, hay and stubble in your lives. (*1 Cor 3: 12-13*); (*1 John 1: 9*)
9. Do not neglect to assemble together with the brothers and sisters in the Lord. (*Hebrews 10: 25*)
10. Pray for one another and prevent discord among the brethren. (*1 Timothy 2: 8*); (*James 5: 16*); (*Proverbs 6: 16-19*)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FOURTEEN.

1. What are we looking for in the future according to (2 Corinthians 4: 18)?
2. When do we start glorifying God in this present life? Scripture.
3. Explain (*1 Corinthians 15: 52-53*)
4. When the Old Testament saints sacrificed these animals, what happened to their sins?
5. Who qualify for new glorified bodies?
6. Who all are included in the first resurrection?
7. Who are destined for the second resurrection? Scripture.
8. Why is it necessary that God creates for us a new body?
9. Who are those who will become the bride of Christ?
10. Who are those of (*Revelation 19: 9b*)?
11. Explain (*Ephesians 5: 30*)
12. Explain (*Colossians 1: 22b*).
13. When was God the Holy Spirit given to individual believers? Scripture.
14. What was the purpose of John the Baptist's baptism?
15. Name seven purposes for which these glorified bodies are necessary.
16. Who became the first fruits of the first resurrection?
17. When did the body of Christ come into existence? Scripture please.
18. Write an essay on, "The Bride of Christ."
19. Name at least 7 principles that Christians should be mindful of, as they study the Scriptures.
20. Why is the Divine viewpoint necessary in the study of the Bible? Give Scripture to verify your answer.

CHAPTER FIFTEEN



WHAT DOES THE FUTURE HOLD?

Please refer to my Biblical Textbook, "What Does the Future Hold" for a more detailed and complete teaching. We are merely dealing with a few important issues at this time as examples of things to come. Eschatology cannot be excluded from these important questions and thus we have included them in this method of deciphering some important issues.

To those outside the fold of Christ, they are allowing time to pass away and with it Hope. God is patient and He is fair. He has given us a choice and made a way of life available to all. Those who die without placing their faith in the Lord Jesus Christ are without hope and will experience the out pouring of the eternal wrath of God. We have considered the consequences of believing and not believing. The choice is ours, do we choose God's way, or do we choose a way that seemeth right to men, but the end is judgement and eternal death in the lake of fire? Studies these lessons carefully and I want to encourage you to press on into greater revelations from the Word of God. The saints of all ages have a blessed hope in the Lord Jesus Christ. The Hope is established by the grace of God, through the death and resurrection of His Eternal Son, the Lord Jesus Christ.

It is always a sad moment when we hear of tragedies that come into our lives or into the lives of our friends. Many believers have lived in this world with many trials of their faith. We think of an all important statement from the Bible. "*And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to His purpose.*" (Romans 8: 28) We must remember that these all things are not always good things, at that particular moment, but they do work together for the good to them that love God. Christ, the Creator of all things, allowed Himself to suffer many things and to be hated by the world, but He looked ahead to the final accomplishments. In like manner, we need to be mindful of the final outcome of our difficult times in this life. That final outcome for believers is to be well pleasing to our Eternal living Savior.

I have divided the following brief study of eschatology (future events) into three aspects.

ETERNAL UTOPIA.
UNITED KINGDOM OF GOD.
PARADISE FOUND.

THE TRIAL RUN WITH THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS.

We constantly need to refer to this coming kingdom of righteousness, because we as the saints of God will play a very active part in it. It will not be the "Eternal Utopia" but it will have God's perfect form of righteousness taught to all nations. It will be like a trial run, but as great as it will be, the best will be yet to come. In spite of the presents of Jesus Christ in the Millennium, the cancer of sin will still be present, and the last conflict with the evil forces will take place after this thousand year kingdom of righteousness. It really will not be a battle, but rather a final stroke from God the Father in the heavenlies when he blasts that great force out of existence by fire from heaven. "*And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and*

compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city, and fire came down God out of heaven, and devoured them.” (Revelation 20: 9)

A. ETERNAL UTOPIA

REMOVAL OF ALL EVIL FOR ETERNITY

The final removal of all evil forces will take place after the fire will come down upon Satan's combined forces. These forces of Satan and his demons and countless earthly people, will surround Jerusalem. This will be the final conflict with all sin, and sin will never express itself again throughout eternity to come! *“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night forever and ever.” (Revelation 20: 10)* Where this lake of fire will be situated, we do not know, but one thing that we are sure of and that is, sin will be no more! God Himself will fulfill His promise *“To make an end of sins.” (Daniel 9: 24)* The heavens above and this old earth have been contaminated by sin, and as we have already studied, God is going to make all things new. (2 Corinthians 5: 17); (Isaiah 65: 17) It will be a glorious day when all evil is removed and God Himself will “bring in everlasting righteousness.” There will be no evil thoughts, words or deeds in God's new creation, for the sum total of all sin shall be enclosed forever in the lake of fire.

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGEMENT.

First, at the Great White Throne Judgement, there will be no small children who died before they came into the age of accountability, because they will be part of the first resurrection. All those millions of unborn children which were aborted will all take part in the first resurrection.

The Great White Throne Judgement will be the final judgement against all the ungodly of all ages. We need to emphasize this finality of all sins along with the removal of all ungodly for the rest of eternity. *“And I saw a great white throne, and Him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was no place found for them.” (Revelation 20: 11)* This can be none other than the Lord Jesus Christ whose face we shall see someday in our glorified bodies. However the heavens and the earth will disappear in insignificance before His very face.

As we have declared before, because of the total contamination of both the heavens and the earth God will perform their elimination! But before this happens, the second resurrection will take place. *“And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is the book of life. And the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead that were in it, and death and hades delivered up the dead that were in them; and they were judged every man according to their works.” (Revelation 20: 12-13)*

This second resurrection takes place among all the ungodly of all ages, regardless of where they should be found. The book of life will be opened and the issue will be, whose name is written in the book of life. Those who have accepted the gift of God will be listed in the Book of Life. Their sins will not be the issue for salvation, as Christ died for the sins of the whole world.

These of this second resurrection will be judged by their good works, comparing them with the perfect righteousness of God. If you reject Jesus Christ, you are relying on your own works and you will find that all your good works will fall short of God's requirements of perfection.

While the unbelieving dead are waiting for this final condemnation, they remain in hell or hades, experiencing a living death. After they are removed from hades, the place of death, then their place of permanent captivity will be the lake of fire, with Satan all the ungodly of all ages. *“And death and hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.” (Revelation 20: 14)* What will be the results of this second death? *“And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.” (Revelation 20: 15)*

The Lord Jesus Christ whom they have rejected will be acknowledged before they are cast into the lake of fire. God will not only show them their condemnation at the Great White Throne, but they will also bow before the Eternal Son and confess Him as Lord of all. (Philippians 2: 9-11)

EVERY KNEE SHALL BOW BEFORE THE SON OF GOD.

We who are of the saints of God, regardless of when we lived, have already bowed our knees before the Eternal Son of God. We did this in reverence, giving all honor and praise with thanksgiving to the Lord Jesus Christ. But those of the second resurrected must bow before Christ acknowledging Him as the Eternal Son of God.

Before the ungodly are cast forever into the lake of fire they will have to cry out as the demons did, during Christ's earthly ministry. *"And when He was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met Him two possessed with demons, coming out of the tombs, exceedingly fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying, What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? Art thou come here to torment us before the time?" (Matthew 8: 28-29)* These demons, which possessed these men knew that Jesus Christ was the Eternal Son of God. No questions asked!

Those remaining in hell or hades awaiting their final judgement know now that Jesus Christ is the Eternal Son of God. Their day of public confession will come before the great white throne, as Jesus Christ sits upon the judgement seat. *"Wherefore, God also hath highly exalted Him, and given Him a name which is above every name, that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth, and every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God, the Father." (Philippians 2: 9-11)* This will be witnessed by the saints of God, as we stand in the presence of the Lord, our Bridegroom. We will witness the final judgement of the ungodly of all ages.

THE OLD CREATION WILL PASS AWAY FOREVER.

The Word of God declares that God will make all things new, and as we have already quoted, the new creation will be so wonderful and complete, that the old order will not be remembered. *"Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, in which dwelleth righteousness." (2 Peter 3: 13)* Please note what the Holy Spirit revealed to Peter. *"Looking for and hastening unto the coming of the day of God, in which the heavens, being on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?" (2 Peter 3: 12)* "When will that happen?" you may ask. God is no hurry, for time is nothing to Him! (2 Peter 3: 8) There is a very important factor as to when the heavens and the earth will be dissolved. There are precious souls for whom Christ died and please take notice. *"The Lord is not slack concerning His promise, as some men count slackness, but is long suffering toward us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance." (2 Peter 3: 9)* God knows that all will not come to repentance, but He is waiting for that final precious soul to accept Christ as his personal Savior, making up the complete body of Christ, before the Rapture takes place. He is also mindful, of all of those that will believe during the great tribulation, as well as those who will become saints during the Millennium. *"But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat; the earth also, and the works that are in it, shall be burned up." (2 Peter 3: 10)*

BE ALERT- ALL SAINTS OF GOD.

Knowing of the coming wrath of God upon all ungodliness, may each of us who know the Lord as our personal Savior be alerted. *"Seeing, then, that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy living and godliness," (2 Peter 3: 11)* We as believers should constantly walk in the light of God's Word. (1 John 1: 7-9) We know that we shall see Jesus face to face. Let me ask you, will you be ashamed before the Lord? We have an eternal hope set before us! *"And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself even as He is pure." (1 John 3: 3)*

THE ETERNAL AND ABSOLUTE PERFECTION OF GOD

God has arranged for our continual cleansing, during our journey through this life. As we walk in the admonition of God the Holy Spirit, He will guide us along life's journey. The Holy Spirit will also

keep on filling you with Himself that to are able to keep in fellowship with the Lord. Our purity during life's journey does not come from our personal efforts, but rather from the finished work of Christ. Our lives are accepted in Christ by the grace of God the Father, being covered by the eternal righteousness of the Eternal Son of God. We are destined for that eternal "Utopia" of God, and this will culminate when we receive our glorified bodies, when the Rapture takes place. Until then, we need a constant cleansing, knowing that our High Priest ever liveth before God the Father making intercession for us. (*Hebrews 7:25*) We have God the Holy Spirit who is constantly praying for us with prayers that only the Godhead understand. (*Romans 8: 26-27*)

The absolute perfection of God is prepared by the Triune God, and in the fullness of time, God will bring it to pass. We have God the Holy Spirit, not only giving us that new birth, but He also is dwelling within us throughout this life as well as eternity to come. May the Lord open your eyes of understanding as the saints of God, realizing that greater is He who is within us, than all the world, the flesh and the devil that is in the world. (*1 John 4: 4*)

Let us go forward with the things of the Lord, and study what the Bible says about this coming "United Kingdom of God."

B. UNITED KINGDOM OF GOD.

We are reminded in the Book of the Revelation of Jesus Christ that, the seventh angel will sound forth his trumpet, declaring the coming of God's united and eternal kingdom of righteousness, which will be established both in the new heavens and the new earth. "And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, the kingdom of this world is become the kingdom of our Lord, and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever." (*Revelation 11: 15*) This will be a "Glorious Forever" in the presence of the Triune God, who will dwell forever with His creatures washed in the precious blood of the Lamb of God.

There will be no conflict or dissension throughout eternity to come. Christ has sanctified Himself and became our propitiation, bearing our sins. "And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also be sanctified through the truth. Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also who shall believe on me through their Word; That they all may be one, as Thou Father, art in me, and I in Thee, that they also may be one in us." (*John 17: 19-21a*) The unity within the Godhead will someday include us in a wonderful unity as the saints of God. All of this is part of the eternal plan of God.

We as creatures of God have been given the freedom of choice. Some have chosen their own way, rejecting God's provision thus sealing their destiny, to be cast into the lake of fire. We who have become the saints of God by God's grace have the promise of a glorious eternal life with the true and living God. There will be a glorious unity throughout all of God's new creation and sin will never show it's ugly head again. What a "Blessed Hope" God has given to all who will believe. "The Spirit Himself beareth witness with our spirit, that we are the children of God." (*Romans 8: 16*)

THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS DEMONSTRATED.

The final demonstration which God will present to mankind will be the thousand year reign of the Eternal Son of God upon planet earth. This reign of righteousness is called the Millennium. Christ the king of Israel presented Himself to the Jews, during His earthly ministry, but they rejected Him and had Him crucified by the Roman Government. As you recall in these Biblical teachings that John the Baptist was sent as a substitute to Elijah, as God in His Omniscience knew that they would reject their Messiah, and the kingdom age would be preceded by the great tribulation. From that final punishment for the Jewish nation, because of her rejection of Christ, there will be those of both Jews and Gentiles who will enter into the kingdom of righteousness.

This great demonstration by God, before the world of mankind will be the most dramatic out pouring of the righteousness of God before all nations, under the most favorable conditions. Only mankind will still be totally depraved, and will have to make individual choices, as to whether they will go the way of the Lord, or the way of the world, the flesh and the devil. Those that will come out of the great tribulation and be counted as sheep will enter into the kingdom of righteousness.

The saints of all ages will be the ambassadors for Christ who will be reigning in Jerusalem as the

capital of the whole world. We will be in our glorified bodies with tremendous teaching ability, reaching every tongue and nation of the world. During those thousand years, the gospel of the kingdom will be thoroughly preached throughout the whole world. There will be no health problems as nature will be restored and the Word of God empowered.

THE KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS EVALUATED

As the gospel of the kingdom goes forth in mighty power through the saints of all ages, every individual will have the opportunity of accepting the kingdom principles, or rejecting them. God has already revealed what the results will be from those who are born during the kingdom age. Yes, many will accept the gospel of the kingdom through our teaching and preaching. Many shall reject the righteousness of God and secretly follow a sinful life. The gospel of the kingdom will be taught in the schools and Institutes, and all will be without excuse.

Although the kingdom of the thousand years will start out with all sheep; children will be born during the kingdom who will want to do their own things and they will become an easy tool under Satan's power when he is loosed for a season. When will that happen? Let us read God's Word. "*And when the thousand years are ended, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison. and shall go out and deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle; the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.*" (Revelation 20: 7-8) This reveals much to us as to the total depravity of mankind in these present earthly vessels, even under the most favorable circumstances. It is hard for us to imagine that any human being would prefer a kingdom of darkness, as compared to the kingdom of righteousness under the Lord Jesus Christ. A thousand year reign of righteousness throughout the whole world should be convincing enough, but on the contrary, there will be a great rebellion against God.

We may ask the question, "Why does God even bother?" We must remember the character of God demands it, and the plan of God requires it. We must also remember that God is in the process of making an everlasting division of right and wrong. The ultimate future of God is to have a creation where sin will not be present, as He brings in everlasting righteousness. (Daniel 9: 24) God has granted a "Freedom of Choice" and the ungodly shall reap eternal damnation along with the devil and his demonic angels.

C. PARADISE FOUND.

As we conclude just a few difficult Biblical questions answered, may this study be of help to each student of the Bible, in solving other difficult questions concerning Biblical truths. With our finite minds, we cannot expect to have all of the answers to our many question, but eventually we shall know as we are known. (1 Corinthians 13: 12) Until then we must be content to know that God does all things well.

The words "Paradise" and "Utopia" are what we continually "Look For" in this life, but we can only dream of it now. We must wait and "Hope For" such wonders of wonders now, knowing that in God's time, He will bring it to pass. Our children stories usually end with "And they lived happily ever afterward." We all enjoy such endings, but in this present life, apart from our hope in Christ, such conditions will not be possible. We know that life in this world will not get better, but rather continue to get worse. Our "Paradise Lost" happened in the garden of Eden, when our fore-father Adam fell into sin. Our "Paradise Found" has been gained by the second Adam, at the cross. As God has given to us the guarantee of all of His promises through the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, so God has given to the saints in heaven a temporary Paradise.

GOD'S TEMPORARY PARADISE.

God has a special Paradise in the present heavens awaiting for all who die in Christ. This Paradise was unoccupied by Old Testament saints before the crucifixion. You may ask, Where were all the dead who died before the crucifixion? The Bible tells us just exactly where they were. You must read (Luke 16: 19-31); in order to understand where all of the dead were kept. This place was called "Sheol" or "Hades," which is the place of the dead. However, the ungodly as well as the saints were not all in one place. Abraham was in Sheol, waiting for the transfer to Paradise, at that particular time when the rich man wanted Lazarus to come and just wet his tongue with a drop of water. Listen to what Abraham says,

"between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that they who would pass from here to you cannot, neither can they pass to us, that would come from there." (Luke 16: 26)

When Christ arose from the grave he descended into Sheol as the Bible says. *"Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive" (Psalm 68: 18a)* This is also repeated in the Book of Ephesians. The Holy Spirit also confirms this truth. *"Wherefore, He saith, When He ascended up on high, He led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. Now that He ascended, what is it but that He also descended first into the lower parts of the earth? He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that He might fill all things." (Ephesians 4: 8-10)*

Where did the Lord lead those Old Testament saints, who died before He arose from the grave? This is answered by the Lord Himself while speaking to the one thief on the cross who said, *"Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, today shalt thou be with me in Paradise."* (Luke 23: 42-43) Certainly, since the thief on the cross was welcomed into the heavenly Paradise, all of the Old Testament saints were also transferred into the heavenly Paradise, when the Lord entered Sheol and led them forth to the heavenlies.

When the Old Heavens and the old earth are destroyed, then the new Paradise will be created. Since the heavens and the earth will be burned up with fervent heat, what will happen to this heavenly Paradise and where shall we look for this New Paradise? The old Paradise will also be burned in order to make room for the eternal Paradise. There is but one place where we can find a description of the everlasting Paradise, and that is within the Bible. The Holy Spirit gives us only the truth about things to come.

Until the fullness of time arrives, according to God's schedule, we will have to wait for its creation. Nevertheless, we do have a brief preview of it in the Book of Revelation. *"And he showed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bore twelve kinds of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month; and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and His servants shall serve Him; And they shall see His face: and His name shall be in their foreheads. And there shall be no night there; and they need no lamp, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light, and they shall reign forever and ever." (Revelation 22: 1-5)* When this happens, all the ungodly of all ages will have been cast into the lake of fire, along with the beasts, the billions of demons as well as the devil himself. The sum total of sin will be engulfed by the sovereignty and omnipotence of our Almighty God. There will be no escape routes for all of the evil forces, and somewhere in God's great power, all this evil and living death will remain forever and ever, separated from God's new creation.

The united kingdom of God will be established forever by God and time will be no more! This new order of life will be so wonderful that the old order of this present life will be remembered no more, as we behold God's new order in the eternal new creation. I cannot tell you what this new life will be like, but I do know that it will be exceeding abundantly above all that we could ask for or think about. God has kept the very best for last, to be enjoyed by those who have put their trust in Him, by their own freedom of choice.

CONCLUSION

I am sure that we haven't answered all of your questions, and I know that all of my own questions are not answered. But this one thing I am sure of and that is, God does all things well! I may not have all the answers about what the future holds, but I know the true and living Eternal God who holds the future. I can trust Him with my future, knowing that, *"But God commendeth His love toward us in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us." (Romans 5: 8)* *"And you hath He made alive, who were dead in trespasses and sins; In which in times past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the sons of disobedience." (Ephesians 2: 1-2)*

God has done it all and we owe Him our complete allegiance. There is nothing that we can add to or take away from the perfect provision of God, under every circumstance. *"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves, it is the gift of God - Not of works, lest any man should boast."* (Ephesians 2: 8-9) God's working power must be fully manifested in our lives for God's approval. May I again remind you of some important factors when you study God's Word and when these problems of

interpretation present themselves.

1. A new birth by God the Holy Spirit is a pre-requisite in studying God's Word. (*John 3: 3-8*)
2. Understand thoroughly the character of the Triune God, according to the Bible. (*1 Corinthians 2: 10-11*)
3. Seek to understand the plan of God according to the Bible. (*2 Timothy 2: 15*)
4. Keep on being filled with God the Holy Spirit so that you might understand the Divine viewpoint as revealed in the Bible. (*Eh 3: 19*)
5. Confess your short comings and sin, keeping short accounts with God. (*1 John 1: 7-9*)
6. Understand to whom God is speaking and promising specific blessings. (*Deuteronomy 32: 8*); (*Genesis 22: 17*)
7. As you study God's Word, keep it in context, so as you may understand to whom God is specifically speaking. (*2 Chronicles 7: 14*); (*Matthew 25: 31-40*)
8. Depend upon God the Holy Spirit to guide and teach you in the understanding of the Bible. (*John 16: 13*); (*John 14: 26*); (*Romans 8: 14*)
9. Be aware of the need to "Rightly Divide the Word of God," so that you understand the subject matter of which the Holy Spirit is referring to. (*2 Timothy 2: 15*)

THE FINAL WORD OF ADMONITION

As God's Ambassador through your trust in the Lord Jesus Christ, give God first place in your life, at all times! Allow God's Word to become a part of your life, as you share Christ with others. Keep humble before the Lord and remember. *"But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us."* (*2 Corinthians 4: 7*) *"For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven,"* (*2 Corinthians 5: 1-2*) *"If ye, then, be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth."* (*Colossians 3: 1-2*) May each of us remember that since we are partakers of the Lord and understand the high calling in Christ Jesus, that our responsibility before God is great. As national Christian leaders, may each of you realize, *"What? Know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price; therefore, glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's."* (*1 Corinthians 6: 19-20*)

God is mindful of every need that you have and desires to give you the very best, as you serve him during your earthly journey. You have been given a high calling in Christ Jesus and not in yourself. *"All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works."* (*2 Timothy 3: 16-17*) Whatever your natural and supernatural gifts may be, use all to the glory and praise of the Lord Jesus Christ. *"Wherefore, seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto Jesus, the Author and finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God."* (*Hebrews 12: 1-2*)

QUESTIONS ON CHAPTER FIFTEEN.

1. What is your conception as to "What does the Future Hold"?
2. Who is responsible for "Bringing in the Kingdom"?
3. Explain (*Romans 8: 28*)
4. Name the Biblical events before the eternal kingdom of God.
5. When will all sin and evil be removed forever? Scripture please.
6. What and where will the final judgement of all sin be located? Scripture please.
7. Write an essay on the subject, "The Great White Throne Judgement."
8. When shall every knee bow before Christ, according to (*Philippians 2: 9-11*)?
9. Explain the importance of rightly dividing the Word of Truth. (*2 Timothy 2: 15*)
10. Why is it necessary for this Old creation to pass away? (*2 Peter 3: 10-12*)
11. What is God's desire for all mankind? Scripture please.
12. Write on (*2 Peter 3: 11*) & (*1 John 3: 3*)
13. Explain (*Hebrews 7: 25*) & (*Romans 8: 26-27*) & (*1 John 4: 4*)
14. When will (*Revelation 11: 15*) be fulfilled?
15. When will there be a perfect unity among all saints? (*John 17: 19-21a*)
16. Why do we have the trial run of the Millennium before the eternal kingdom of God? Scripture Please.
17. Explain (*Revelation 20: 7-8*)
18. When will God create a new Paradise? Scripture please.
19. When did we know about God's temporary Paradise? Scripture Please.
20. Who are those living in this present Paradise now? Scripture.
21. Give some important guide lines in the study of the Bible. Scripture Please.
22. Write a short essay on , "Paradise Found"
23. Explain how one can handle difficult Bible questions within the Word of God. Give us some Scripture to verify your reasoning.

Index of Questions For Thought

HAS JESUS ALWAYS EXISTED?	9
WHO WAS MELCHIZEDEK?	9
DID MELCHIZEDEK HAVE A BEGINNING OR END?	9
WHERE WAS GOD IN THE BEGINNING?	11
WILL THERE EVER BE A CHANGE FOR THE BETTER?	13
WHAT ABOUT THE ASPECT OF GOD'S CHARACTER?	13
WHAT ABOUT THE ASPECT OF VOLITION OR FREE WILL?	13
WHO IS TO BLAME FOR THIS MESS IN WHICH WE LIVE?	13
WHERE DOES THE TROUBLE OF THIS WICKED LIFE COME FROM?	13
WHAT IS THE SOLUTION AND CURE FOR THESE CONDITIONS?	13
WHAT ABOUT THE ASPECT OF CREATION BY GOD SECURELY PURIFIED?	15
WHAT DESCRIPTIVE NAMES ARE USED FOR THE DEVIL?	20
WHAT TWO NAMES WERE GIVEN TO LUCIFER?	20
HOW DID LUCIFER BECOME SATAN OR THE DEVIL?	23
WHAT DID SATAN SAY TO GOD?	23
WHAT WERE THE FIRST SINS?	23
WHAT DOES SATAN DO TODAY?	24
DOES SATAN STILL HAVE HIS POWER?	24
DID SATAN FALL ALONE?	25
HOW DID ONE THIRD OF ALL OF GOD'S ANGELS FALL INTO SIN?	25
ARE THE CAPTIVES STILL CONFINED?	26
WHAT HAPPENED TO EARTH WHEN SATAN WAS FIRST CAST OUT OF HEAVEN?	26
WHAT PRISONERS ARE BEING KEPT BY SATAN?	26
WERE OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS KEPT TOGETHER WITH SINNERS?	26
HOW DID THE EARTH BECOME VOID?	26

WHAT HAPPENED TO THE OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS WHO DIED?	26
DOES SATAN INDWELL OTHER CREATURES?	27
WHAT WILL BE SATAN'S END?	28
WHY WERE ANY OF US SINNERS CREATED?	29
WHY ARE WE DIFFERENT FROM ALL OTHER CREATION?	31
WHAT WAS ADAM'S TEST?	35
WHAT WAS THE CONSEQUENCE OF ADAM'S FAILURE?	36
WHY DON'T WE NEED TO SACRIFICE ANIMALS ANYMORE?	39
HOW WILL GOD ERADICATE SIN?	39
WHAT DID OLD TESTAMENT SAINTS DO ABOUT THEIR SINS?	39
WHAT WAS MANKIND TRYING TO DO AT THE TOWER OF BABEL?	46
WHERE WAS THE FIRST ONE-WORLD-RELIGION STARTED?	47
WAS SATAN BEHIND THE BUILDING OF THE TOWER OF BABEL?	47
WHAT IS RELIGION ALL ABOUT?	48
WHO STARTED THE MOTHER / CHILD RELIGION?	49
IS ANYTHING WRONG WITH A ONE-WORLD-RELIGION?	50
WHERE DID RELIGIOUS POWER GO WHEN BABYLON FELL?	51
WHEN DOES A RELIGION BECOME PAGAN?	52
WHY NOT TAKE THE BEST OF ALL RELIGIONS?	53
WHAT IS THE ONLY REVELATION OF GOD BY GOD?	54
HOW DID GOD KEEP HIS PROMISE TO ADAM AND EVE?	57
WHY DID GOD DIVIDE THE NATIONS?	57
WHO ARE SOME OF THE PEOPLE IN THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE?	60
HOW DID GOD PROTECT THE MESSIANIC LINEAGE?	61
HOW SHOULD WE STUDY THE BIBLE?	62
WHAT IS THE CHARACTER OF GOD?	64
WHY WERE THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD GIVEN TO MOSES?	66

WHAT ARE THE JUDGEMENTS OF GOD?	68
WHY DID GOD LET SIN HAPPEN?	71
HOW DID THE CRUCIFIXION SHOW GOD'S GRACE?	72
HOW DID GOD CARRY OUT HIS PLAN IN SPITE OF SATAN?	72
WHY WAS THE CRUCIFIXION NECESSARY?	73
DO GOOD WORKS GET PEOPLE TO HEAVEN?	74
IS SIN IN THE WORLD RESPONSIBLE FOR HUMAN SUFFERING?	76
WHAT KIND OF LIFE IS PLEASING TO GOD?	77
DOES GOD ALLOW SUFFERING FOR REASONS NOT KNOWN TO US?	78
WHY DO SOME CHRISTIANS NEVER GROW SPIRITUALLY?	79
HOW DO CHRISTIANS GROW SPIRITUALLY?	79
WHAT ARE SOME OF THE REASONS WHY CHRISTIANS SUFFER?	80
WHERE WILL RESURRECTED PEOPLE GO?	83
WHO WILL BE RESURRECTED FIRST?	83
HOW ARE THE RAPTURE AND THE FIRST RESURRECTION RELATED?	84
WILL THERE BE OTHER BELIEVERS IN THE FIRST RESURRECTION?	86
WHO WILL BE RAISED IN THE SECOND RESURRECTION?	87
WHY WILL THERE BE A SECOND RESURRECTION TO SEPARATION?	88
WHO CAN CHOOSE WHICH RESURRECTION TO BE A PART OF?	89
WHAT HAS SIN DONE TO CREATION?	93
WHAT DOES GOD DESIRE?	94
HOW GOOD WILL THE NEW HEAVEN BE?	95
WHY THE NECESSITY OF A GLORIFIED BODY?	95
WHAT WILL HAPPEN BEFORE THE NEW CREATION?	97
WHEN WILL THIS FINAL ACT TAKE PLACE?	100
IS THE CHRISTIAN LIFE A DAILY BATTLE?	100
WHAT ARE OUR WEAPONS TO FIGHT OUR THE SPIRITUAL ENEMY?	101

WHEN WILL THE DEVIL BE FOUGHT?	102
WHEN WILL SIN, SATAN AND ALL EVIL BE DESTROYED?	103
WHO WILL STAND BEFORE THE GREAT WHIT THRONE TO BE JUDGED?	103
WHAT WILL HAPPEN TO ALL WHO REJECT JESUS?	104
WHAT WILL THE NEW HEAVENS AND NEW EARTH BE LIKE?	105
WILL WE BE ABLE TO GLORIFY GOD BETTER IN PERFECTED BODIES?	109
WHO WILL BE GIVEN NEW BODIES?	109
DO YOU THINK CHRIST WOULD WANT A CONTAMINATED BRIDE?	111
WHY WOULD THESE EARTHLY SICKLY BODIES BE INADEQUATE FOR HEAVEN? ...	111

In the beginning

Was the Word, and the Word was with GOD
and the Word was GOD

JOHN 1:1

Eternity Past

THE ABSOLUTE GOD
THE ABSOLUTE PLAN
DAN. 9:24

GOD - THE FATHER planned it,
JOHN 10:15-18 : HEB. 10:5b

GOD - THE SON provided it,
JOHN 10:17

GOD - THE HOLY SPIRIT proved it.
1 COR. 12:13

THE ABSOLUTE BLUEPRINT
to achieve a PERFECT
ETERNAL PARADISE-
FREE FROM EVIL
throughout Eternity to come,
based on the Word of GOD

GOD created the
Heaven and the
Earth
GEN. 1:1 : PSALM 19:1

The creation of
the Angels
and the realm of their habitation

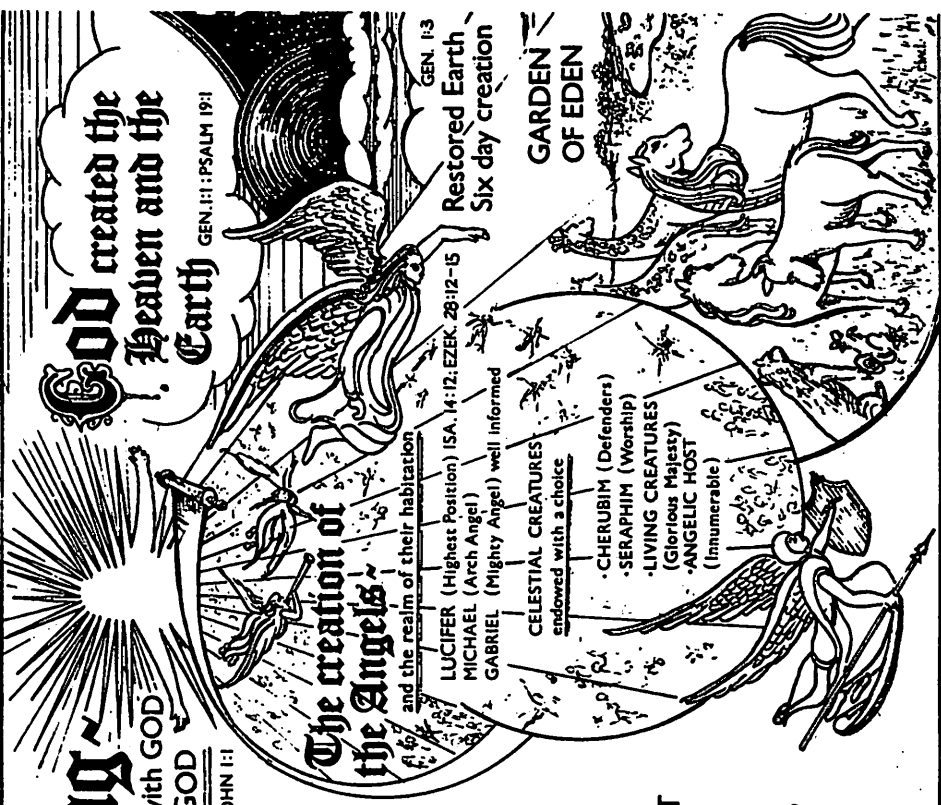
LUCIFER (Highest Position) ISA. 14:12; EZEK. 28:12-15
MICHAEL (Arch Angel)
GABRIEL (Mighty Angel) well informed

CELESTIAL CREATURES
endowed with a choice

- CHERUBIM (Defenders)
- SERAPHIM (Worship)
- LIVING CREATURES (Glorious Majesty)
- ANGELIC HOST (Innumerable)

Restored Earth
Six day creation

GARDEN
OF EDEN

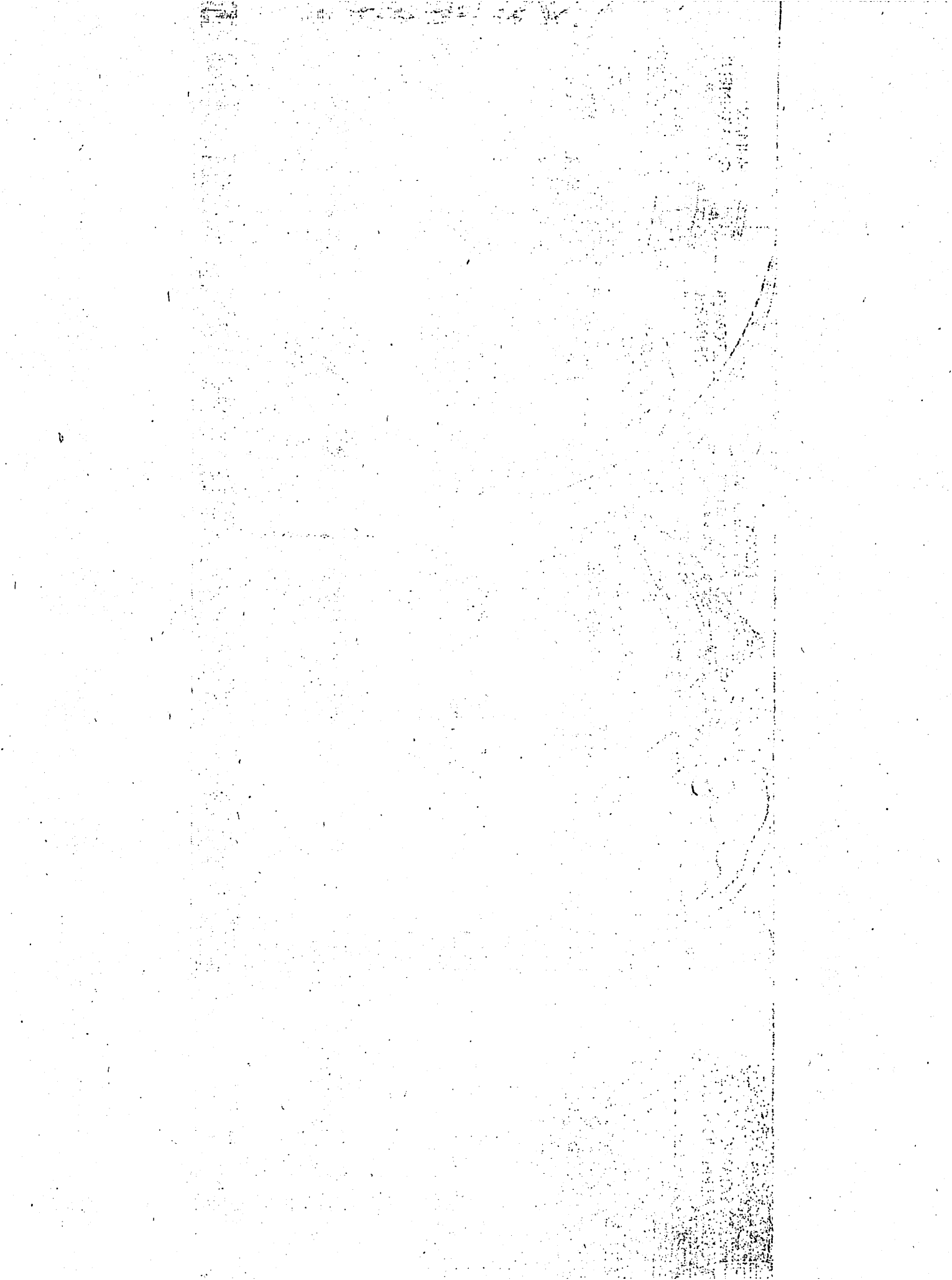


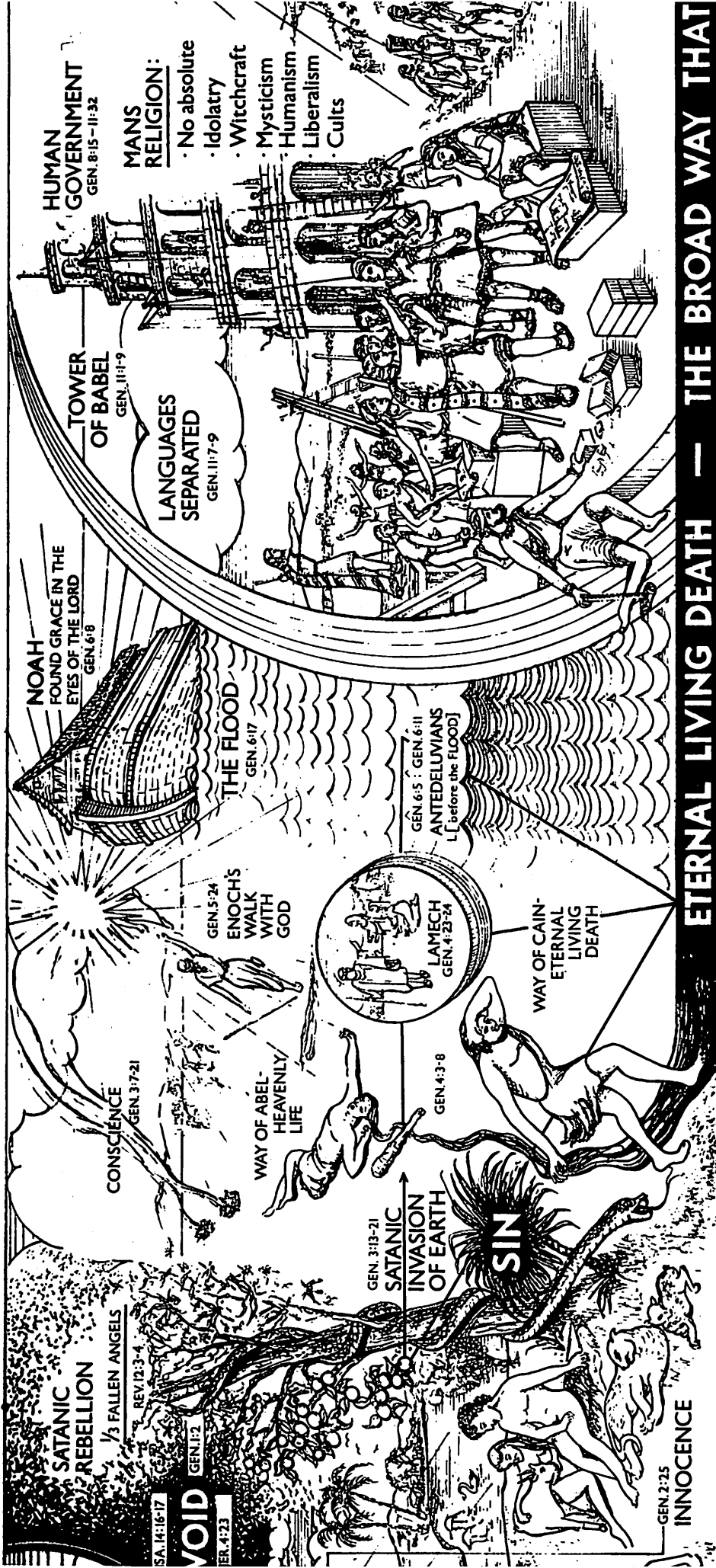
GOD'S PLAN OF ALL AGES
By REV. DR. ANDREW J. LOSIER
Scroll graphics and illustrations by Raymond W. Losier - Copyright pending 1986

©Jupiter Printing Inc., Jupiter, Fla., U.S.A.

The following pages have been perforated and printed on one side only for those who wish to remove the God's Plan of All Ages Chart and assemble it on a wall or into a scroll.

NOT TO BE SOLD





HUMAN GOVERNMENT
GEN. 8:15 - 11:32

MANS RELIGION:

- No absolute
- Idolatry
- Witchcraft
- Mysticism
- Humanism
- Liberalism
- Cults

TOWER OF BABEL
GEN. 11:1-9

LANGUAGES SEPARATED
GEN. 11:7-9

NOAH FOUND GRACE IN THE EYES OF THE LORD
GEN. 6:18

THE FLOOD
GEN. 6:17

ANTEDELLUVIANS
[before the FLOOD]
GEN. 6:5 : GEN. 6:11

ENOCH'S WALK WITH GOD
GEN. 5:24

LAMECH
GEN. 4:23-24

WAY OF CAIN- ETERNAL LIVING DEATH

CONSCIENCE
GEN. 3:7-21

WAY OF ABEL- HEAVENLY LIFE

GEN. 4:3-8

SIN
GEN. 3:13-21
SATANIC INVASION OF EARTH

SATANIC REBELLION
1/3 FALLEN ANGELS
REV. 12:3-4

GEN. 1:2

ISA. 14:16-17

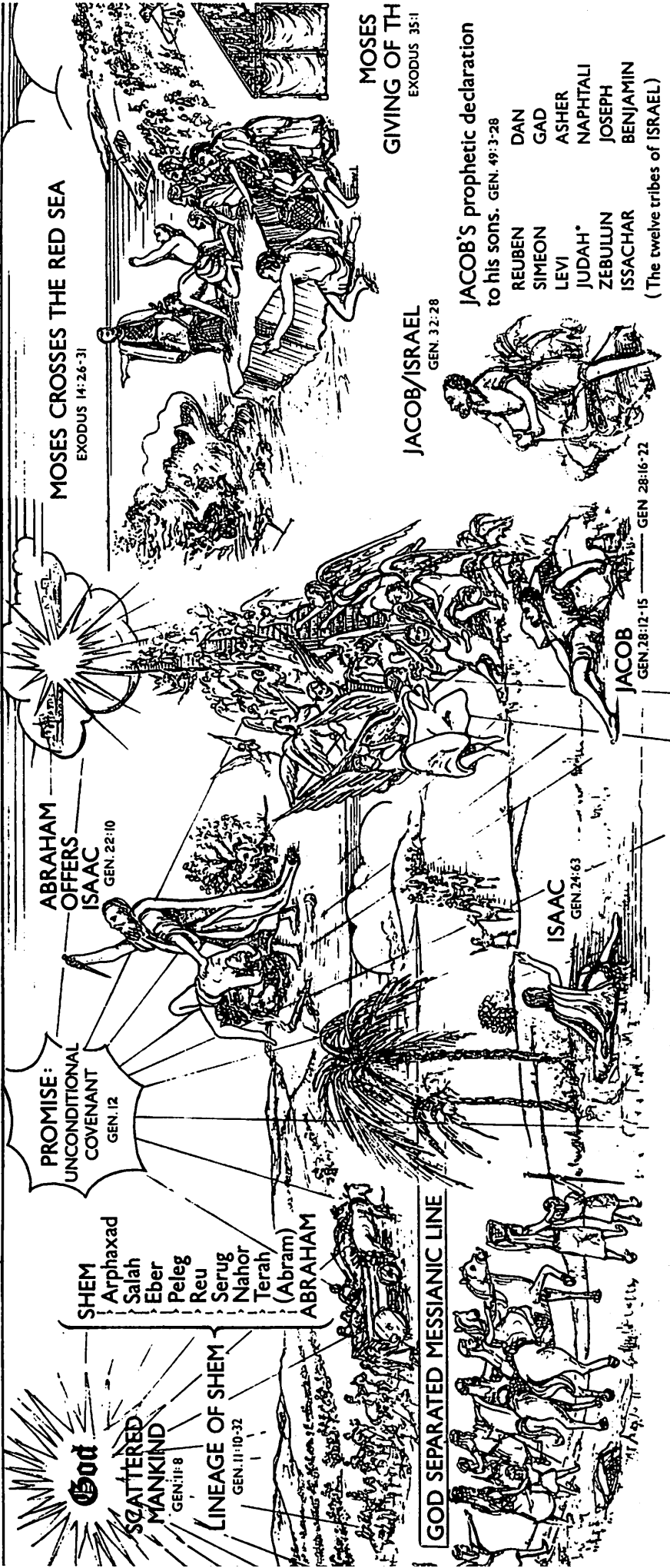
VOID

ER. 4:23

GEN. 2:25

INNOCEENCE

ETERNAL LIVING DEATH — THE BROAD WAY THAT



MOSES CROSSES THE RED SEA
EXODUS 14:26-31

ABRAHAM OFFERS ISAAC
GEN. 22:10

PROMISE: UNCONDITIONAL COVENANT
GEN. 12

- SHEM**
- Arphaxad
 - Salah
 - Eber
 - Peleg
 - Reu
 - Serug
 - Nahor
 - Terah
 - (Abram)
 - ABRAHAM**

SCATTERED MANKIND
GEN. 11:8

LINEAGE OF SHEM
GEN. 11:10-32

GOD SEPARATED MESSIANIC LINE

MOSES GIVING OF THE
EXODUS 35:1

JACOB/ISRAEL
GEN. 32:28



JACOB'S prophetic declaration to his sons. GEN. 49:3-28

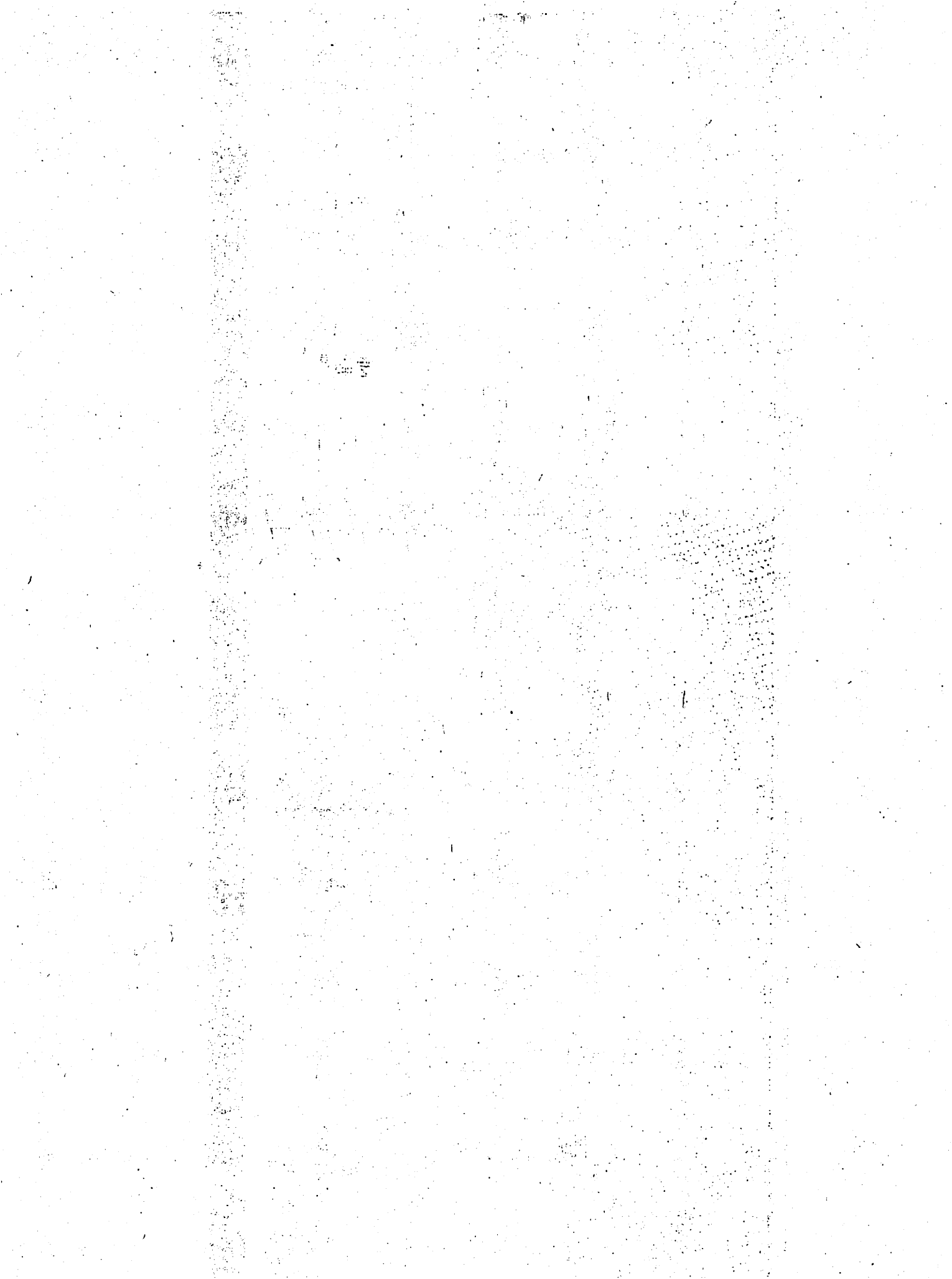
- REUBEN
- SIMEON
- LEVI
- JUDAH*
- ZEBULUN
- ISSACHAR
- DAN
- GAD
- ASHER
- NAPHTALI
- JOSEPH
- BENJAMIN

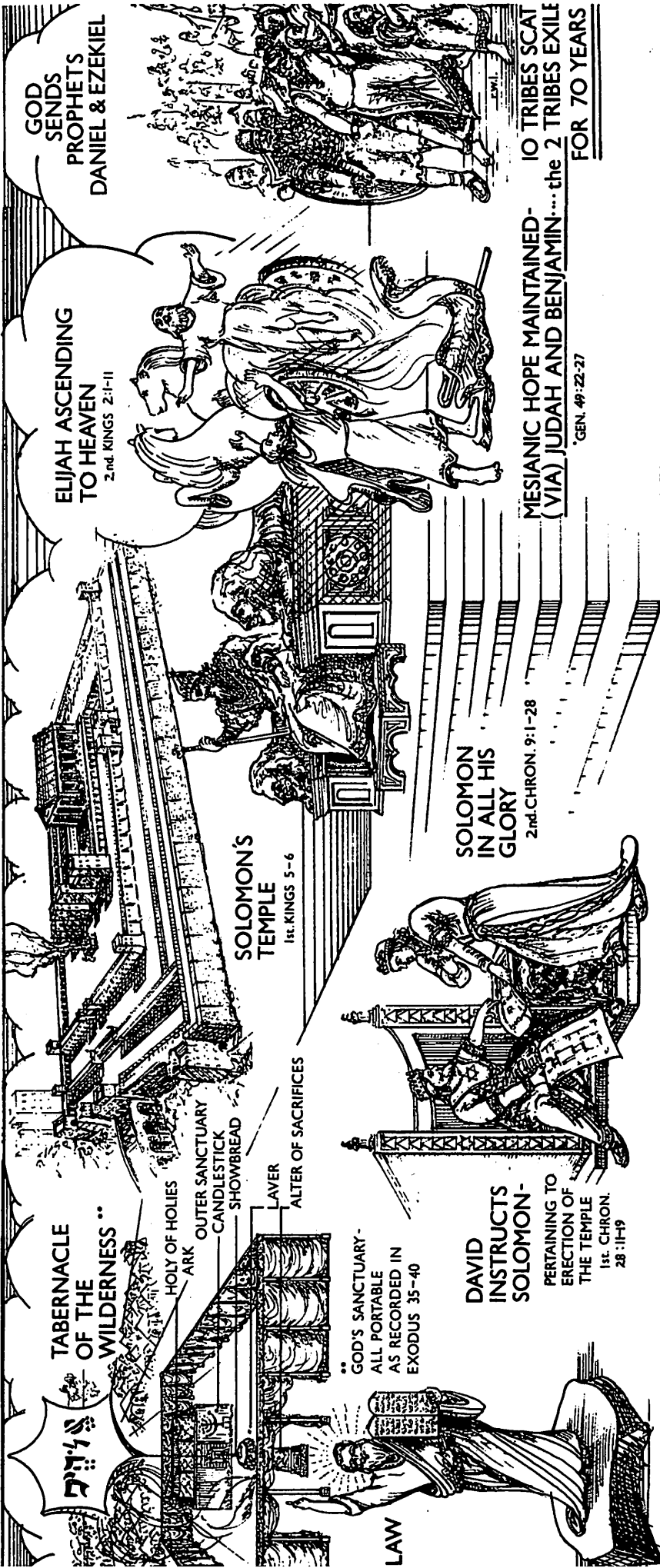
(The twelve tribes of ISRAEL)

JACOB
GEN. 28:12-15

ISAAC
GEN. 24:63

LEADS TO DESTRUCTION GAL. 5:19-21; ADULTERY, FORNICATION, UNCLEANNESS





GOD SENDS PROPHETS DANIEL & EZEKIEL

ELIJAH ASCENDING TO HEAVEN
2nd. KINGS 2:1-11

SOLOMON'S TEMPLE
1st. KINGS 5-6

SOLOMON IN ALL HIS GLORY
2nd. CHRON. 9:1-28

DAVID INSTRUCTS SOLOMON -
PERTAINING TO ERECTION OF THE TEMPLE
1st. CHRON. 28:1-19

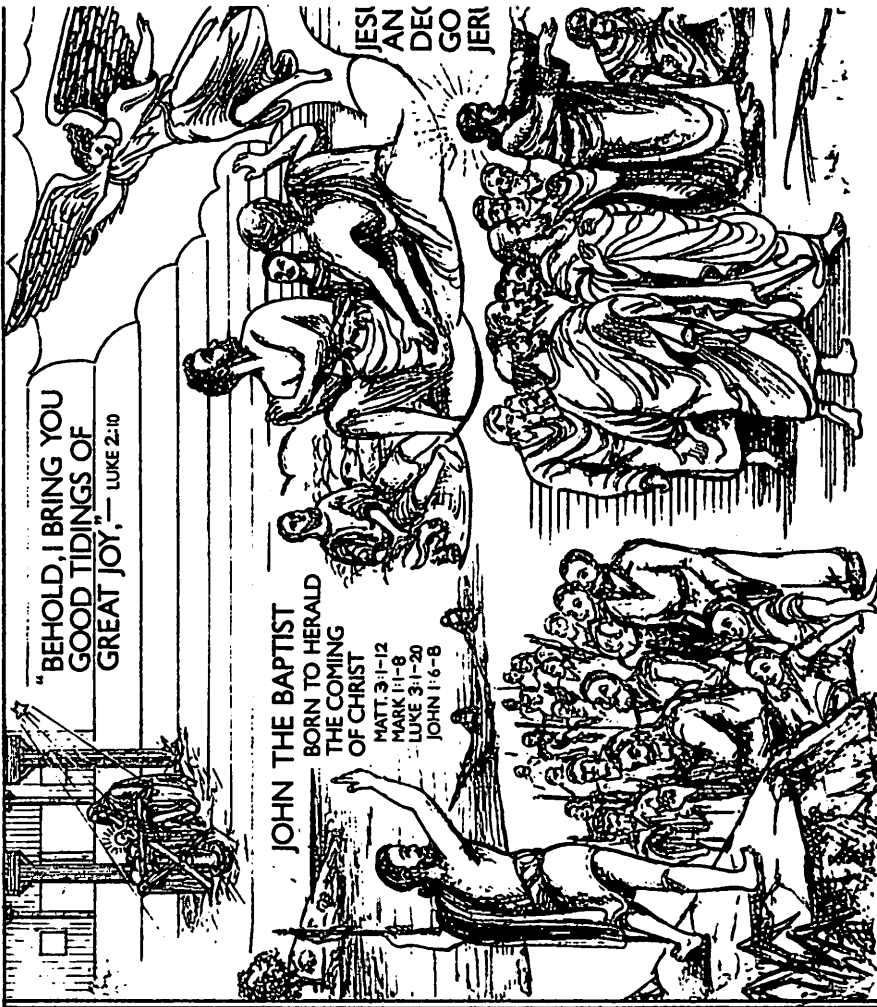
GOD'S SANCTUARY - ALL PORTABLE AS RECORDED IN EXODUS 35-40

MESIANIC HOPE MAINTAINED - (VIA) JUDAH AND BENJAMIN... the 2 TRIBES EXILE FOR 70 YEARS
*GEN. 49:22-27

TABERNACLE OF THE WILDERNESS

LAW

...SS, LASCIVIOUSNESS, IDOLATRY, SORCERY, HATRED, STRIFE, JEALOUSY,



"BEHOLD, I BRING YOU GOOD TIDINGS OF GREAT JOY," — LUKE 2:10

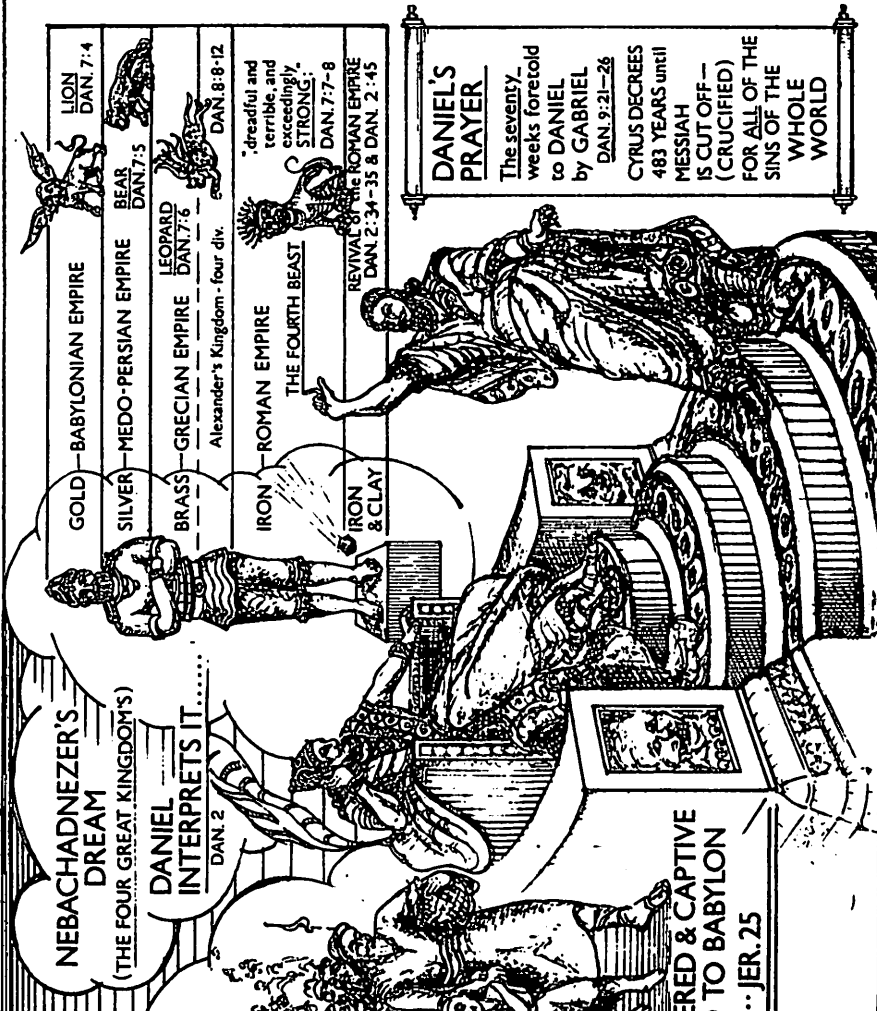
JOHN THE BAPTIST
 BORN TO HERALD
 THE COMING
 OF CHRIST
 MATT. 3:1-12
 MARK 1:1-8
 LUKE 3:1-20
 JOHN 1:6-8

JESI
 AN
 DEC
 GO
 JER

NEBACHADNEZER'S DREAM
 (THE FOUR GREAT KINGDOMS)
DANIEL INTERPRETS IT...
 DAN. 2

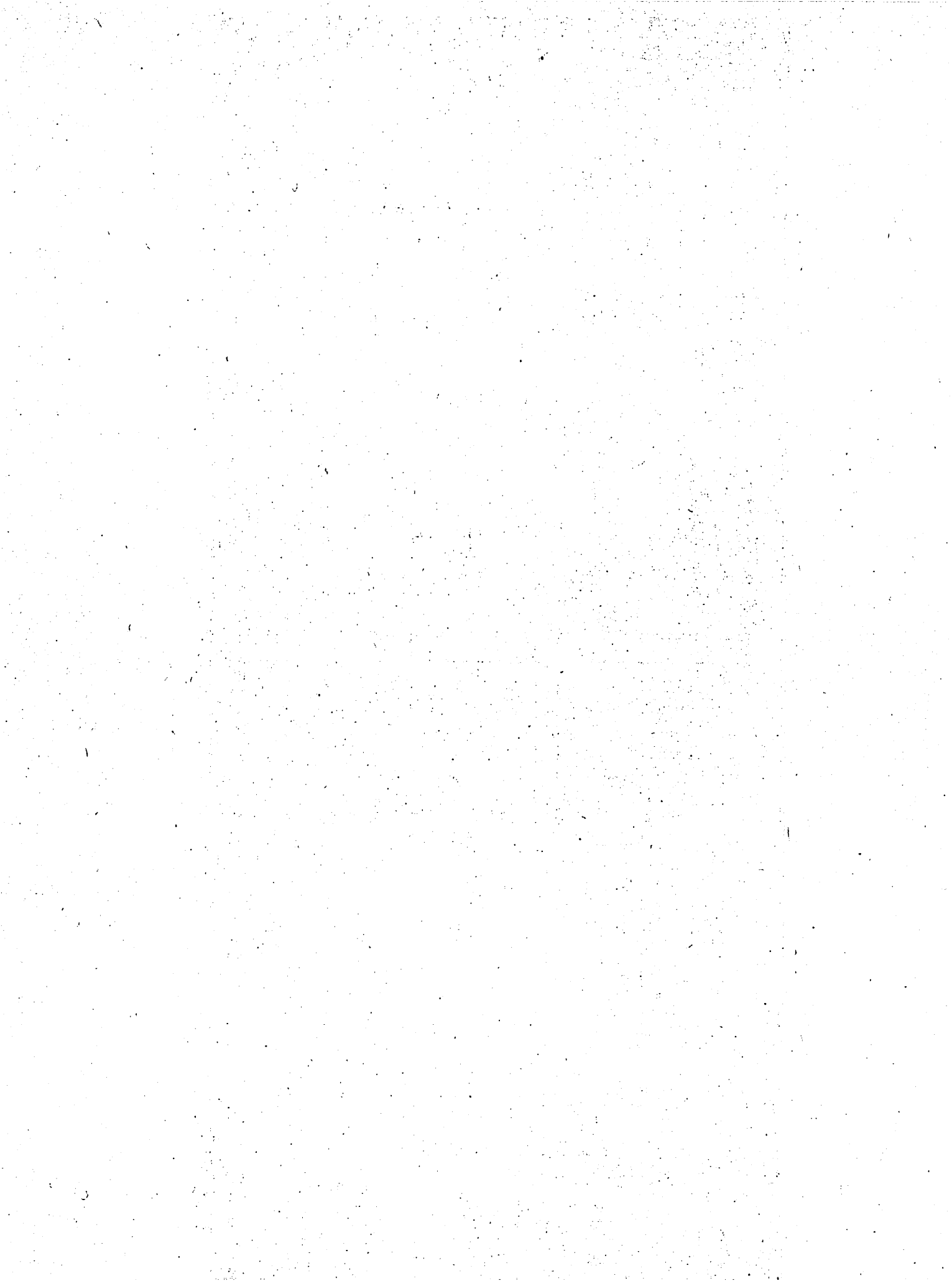
GOLD — BABYLONIAN EMPIRE
SILVER — MEDO-PERSIAN EMPIRE
BRASS — GRECIAN EMPIRE
 Alexander's Kingdom - four div.
IRON — ROMAN EMPIRE
IRON & CLAY — THE FOURTH BEAST
 Revival of the ROMAN EMPIRE
 DAN. 2: 34-35 & DAN. 2: 45

DANIEL'S PRAYER
 The seventy weeks foretold to DANIEL by GABRIEL
 DAN. 9:21-26
 CYRUS DECREES 483 YEARS until MESSIAH IS CUT OFF — (CRUCIFIED) FOR ALL OF THE SINS OF THE WHOLE WORLD



ERED & CAPTIVE
TO BABYLON
 ... JER. 25

WRATH, FACTIONS, SEDITIONS, HERESIES, ENVYINGS, MURDERS, ETC. T



THE LAMB OF GOD SACRIFICED



"CHRIST DIED FOR US" ROM 5:8-10
40 DAYS

HIS PLES IG TO SALEM MARK 10:32-34



ACTS 2:1-2

THE DAY OF PENTECOST

JOEL 2:28

ASCENSION ACTS 1:8-9



CHRIST IN GLORY

THE AGE OF GRACE

EPHESUS REV 2:1-7

Apostolic, good works

THE CHURCH AGE FROM PENTECOST TO RAPTURE - OF BELIEVERS

SMYRNA REV 2:9-11

Suffering Church

REV. 2:12-17

PERGAMUS Formal Religion

THYATIRA REV 2:18-29

Idolatry

REV. 3:1-6

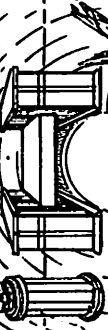
SARDIS Reformation

REV. 3:7-13

PHILADELPHIA Missionary

2nd COR. 5:10
1st COR. 3:9-15

JUDGEMENT SEAT OF CHRIST



1st THESS. 4:13-18

JOHN 14:1-6

THE RAPTURE (MEETING IN THE AIR)

SATAN DRIVEN OUT OF HEAVEN BY MICHAEL AND HIS ARMY (3 1/2 yrs.) JACOBS

REV 12:7-17

THE KEY GIVEN TO SATAN REV. 9:1-21

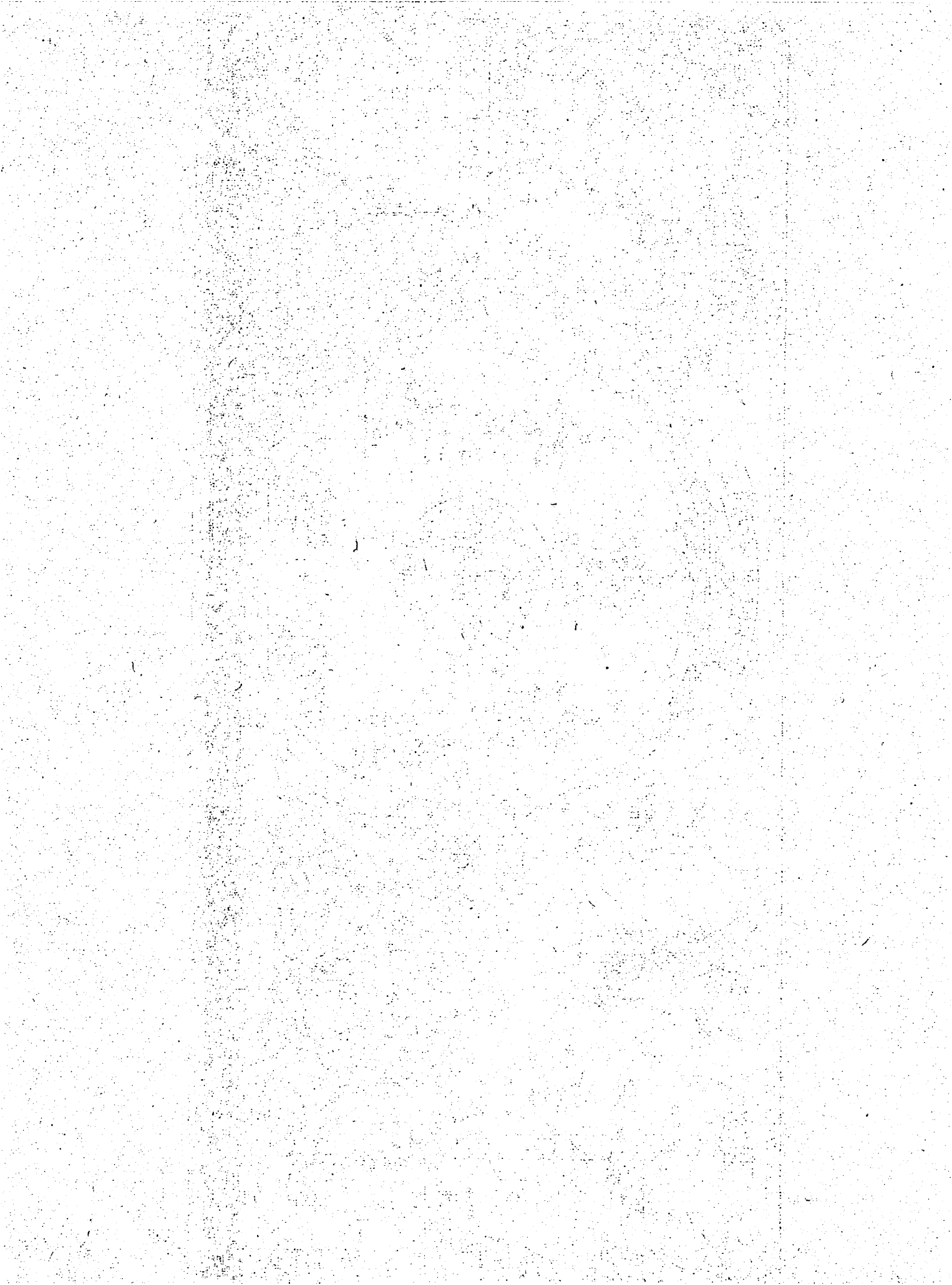
JOHN 3:16

REV 5:



REV 9:7

THE REJECTION OF CHRIST AS THE ETERNAL SON OF GOD



MARRIAGE OF THE LAMB OF GOD
REV. 19:7
THE MARRIAGE SUPPER
REV. 19:17

ABOMINATION OF DESOLATION
MATT. 24:15

MYSTERY BABYLON
REV. 17:18
REV. 18:1-24

TROUBLE (3 1/2 yrs.)

THE GREAT TRIBULATION
(70th.-Seven)

OF DANIEL
9:24
9:26,27

THE BEAST & FALSE PROPHET

CAST INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE
REV. 19:20

THE LORD JESUS CHRIST RETURNS TO REIGN OVER HIS (RIGHTEOUS) KINGDOM ON EARTH
1ST THESS. 3:13 : REV. 11:15
REV. 19:11-21 : ISAIAH 40:10

HEAVENLY RIGHTEOUSNESS COMING DOWN UPON THE EARTH

"Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done ON EARTH, as it is in HEAVEN"
MATT. 6:10

1000 YEAR KINGDOM OF RIGHTEOUSNESS ESTABLISHED
REV. 20:6

NATURE RESTORED
ISAIAH 11:6-9

THE SAINTS SHALL TEACH GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS
REV. 5:10
LIFE SPAN EXTENDED
ISA. 65:20

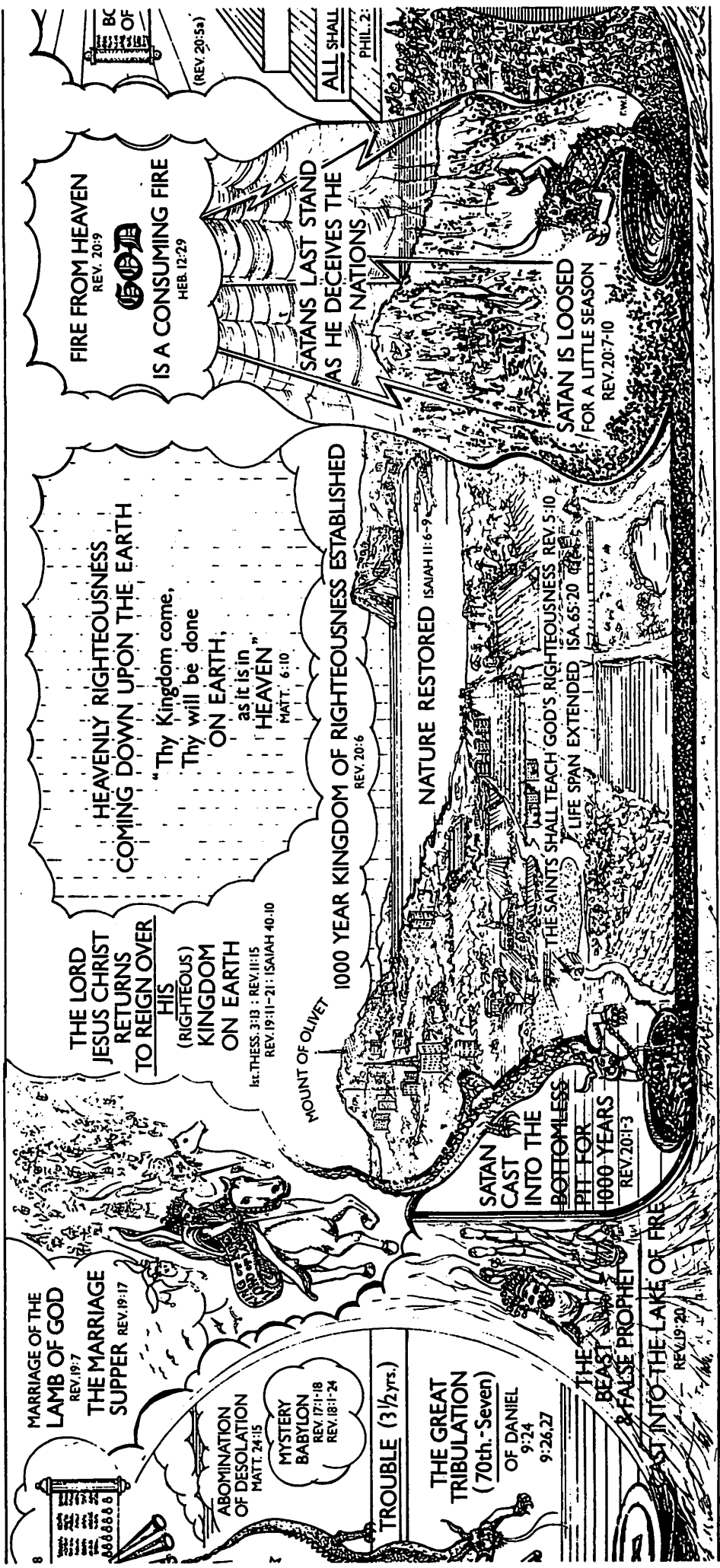
FIRE FROM HEAVEN
REV. 20:9



IS A CONSUMING FIRE
HEB. 12:29

SATANS LAST STAND AS HE DECEIVES THE NATIONS
PHIL. 2:

SATAN IS LOOSED FOR A LITTLE SEASON
REV. 20:7-10

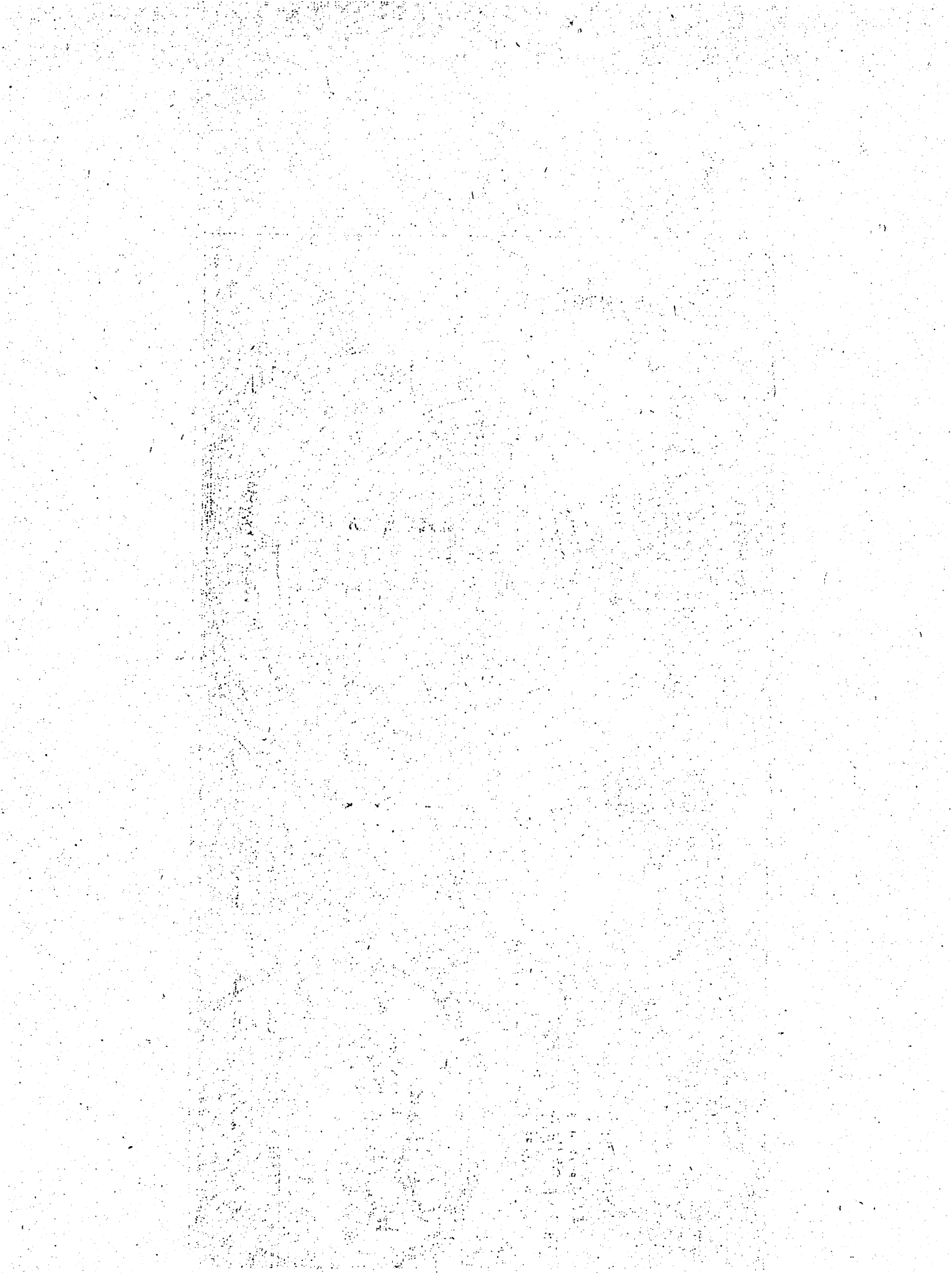


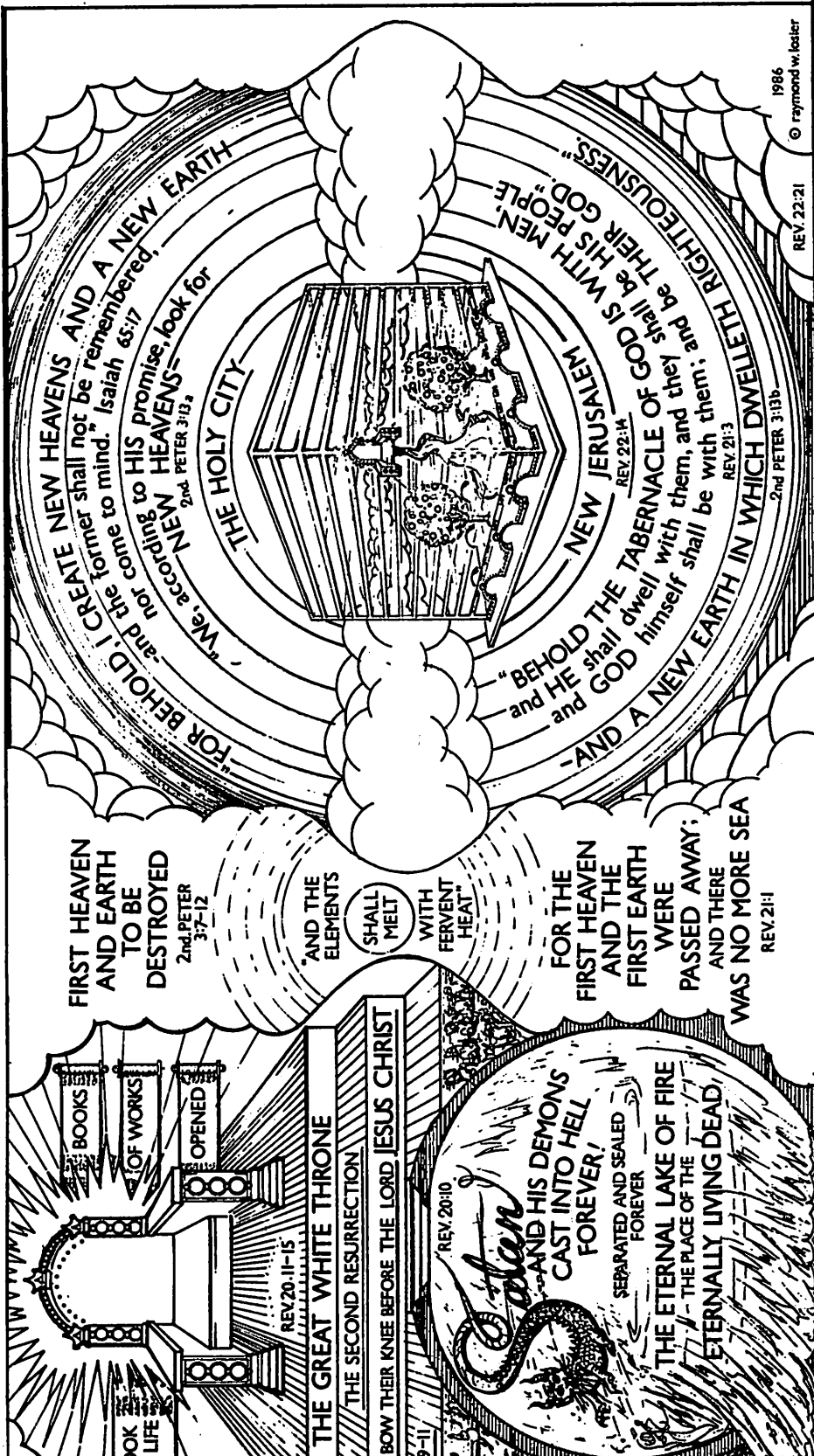
BC OF

(REV. 20:5a)

ALL SHALL

PHIL. 2:





1986
© Raymond W. Hozier

REV. 22:21

REV. 22:14
2nd PETER 3:13b

FOR BEHOLD, I CREATE NEW HEAVENS AND A NEW EARTH
"and the former shall not be remembered, and they shall be as their people."
Isaiah 65:17
"We, according to HIS promise, look for
NEW HEAVENS"
2nd PETER 3:13,2

THE HOLY CITY
NEW JERUSALEM
"BEHOLD THE TABERNACLE OF GOD IS WITH MEN,
and HE shall dwell with them, and they shall be their God,"
and GOD himself shall be with them;
REV. 21:3
-AND A NEW EARTH IN WHICH DWELLETH RIGHTEOUSNESS-

FIRST HEAVEN
AND EARTH
TO BE
DESTROYED
2nd PETER
3:7-12

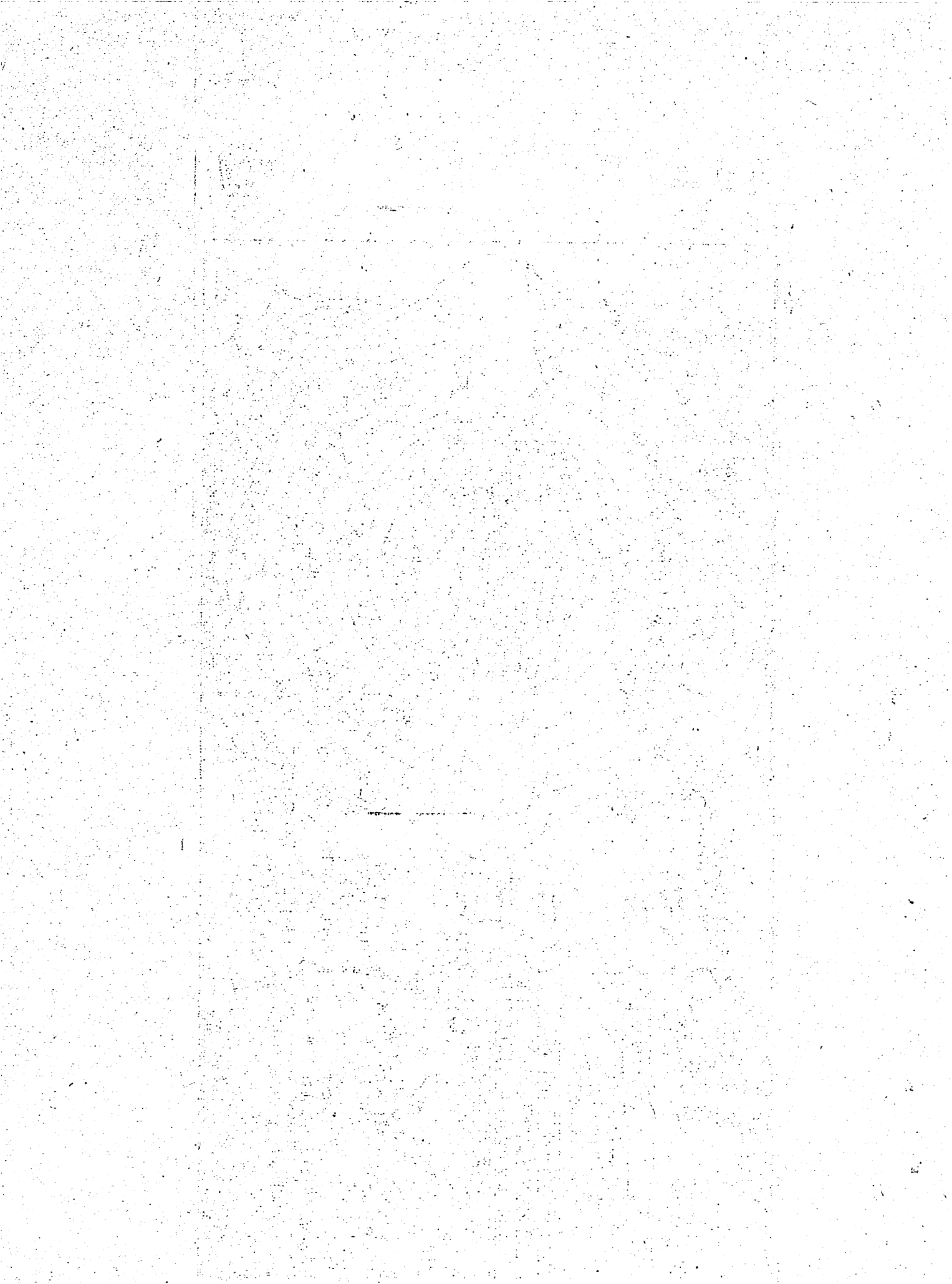
AND THE
ELEMENTS
SHALL
MELT
WITH
FERVENT
HEAT

FOR THE
FIRST HEAVEN
AND THE
FIRST EARTH
WERE
PASSED AWAY;
AND THERE
WAS NO MORE SEA
REV. 21:1

BOOKS
OF WORKS
OPENED
REV. 20:11-15
THE GREAT WHITE THRONE
THE SECOND RESURRECTION
BOW THEIR KNEE BEFORE THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
9-11

REV. 20:10
AND HIS DEMONS
CAST INTO HELL
FOREVER!
SEPARATED AND SEALED
FOREVER
THE ETERNAL LAKE OF FIRE
- THE PLACE OF THE
ETERNALLY LIVING DEAD,
REV. 20:11

REV. 20:10
AND HIS DEMONS
CAST INTO HELL
FOREVER!
SEPARATED AND SEALED
FOREVER
THE ETERNAL LAKE OF FIRE
- THE PLACE OF THE
ETERNALLY LIVING DEAD,
REV. 20:11



Publications

by
Rev. Dr. Andrew J. Losier

A Study of the Book of Daniel

Amazing Grace

Analytical Theological Questionnaire Vol I and Vol II

Battleground and Warfare of Christians

Biblical Outline of Sermons

Christ the Eternal Son of God

Difficult Biblical Questions Answered

I am Alpha and Omega

Know Your Bible Rightly Divided

Memoirs of Africa

One World Government under Satan verses the Kingdom of God Established Forever

Praise Share & Care Through Prayer

Second Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ

The Inspired Word of God

The Book of Romans

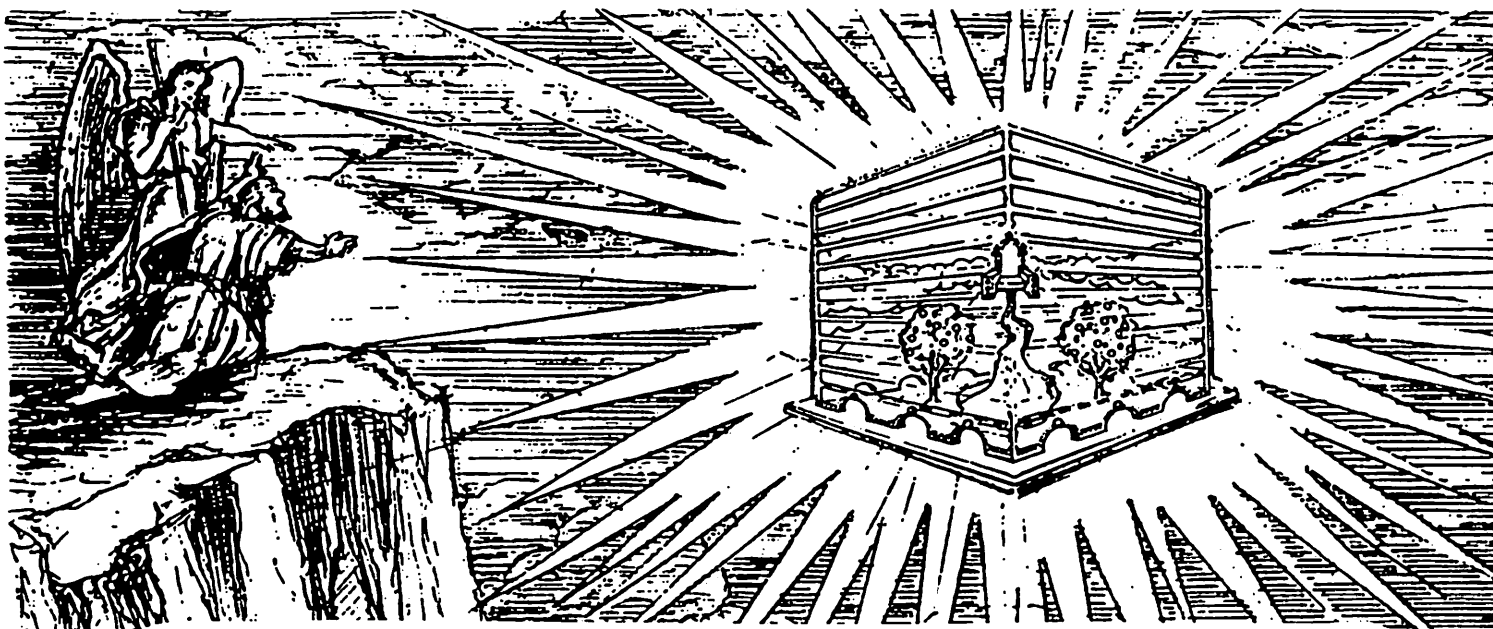
The Cross of Christ

The Holy Spirit

The Glory of God

Treasure Chest of Eternal Gems

What Does the Future Hold?



"And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain and showed me that great city, the Holy Jerusalem, descending out of Heaven from GOD" – Revelation 21 : 10

Author: Rev., Dr. Andrew J. Losier

Missionary in Africa since 1938, established the first of the Christian Literature and Bible Centers in Kenya, East Africa in 1952. Since then, over a billion pieces of FREE CHRISTIAN LITERATURE have been distributed throughout Africa in approximately 50 different languages. The overwhelming response of African Christian leaders to the WORD OF GOD, inspired Rev., Dr. Andrew J. Losier to write this book.

JESUS said "I am ALPHA and OMEGA"

Revelation 1:8

